



몽연 현대 판타지 소설

# 라이프 미션

## LIFE MISSION

BOOK 02

*Mong Yeon*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

**Life Mission**

(라이프 미션)

by

**Mong Yeon**

(몽연)

# **Synopsis**

---

A game that has become reality.

What started out as a virtual reality game, after being suspended out of the blue, has turned into a reality.

The perks are amazing and real – where points can be used to buy precious metals and cures for terminal illnesses.

But so are the consequences.

Death in this new reality game...is just as real.

Our MC was one of the best players of the virtual reality game.

But will he be able to become the best in this new version?

Who will die and who will survive?

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by LightNovelBarista @ [MY:TL](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# **Volume 05**

# Chapter 123

---

Curiosity solves something whenever something unknown appears. Even if this is the current state, everything will become known by learning each one by one.

“Should we look for it? Or call it?”

“Call?”

“Didn’t I tell you? This was the mission area for my tutorial.”

Cha Jun Sung explained about the drunk person. The Caicus appeared after he screamed, and it is possible to do this again.

“Always be on alert. It’s 600,000. 2 of them could come out.”

Cha Jun Sung threw the bait.

“We were saying that too because there are too many points for catching 1. How are you going to divide the people up? Half and half?”

When Cha Jun Sung went up to the transmission tower, the party members talked about the mission amongst themselves. Their conclusion was that there are 2 of them and not 1.

“Koharu, Ms. Violet, and me in the front. Jin Hyuk, just

harrass.”

“Jun Sung, what about me?”

Kyoko asked. Though she is a medic, she engages in battle.

“You stay in the rear with Hercules and then join in wherever there’s an unexpected situation. Help us concentrate on fighting.”

Kyoko also has a battlesuit. Even though she holds a scalpel, she is stronger than a level 4 and can take on a level 5 if she combines her strength with Hercules’.

“Anyone who doesn’t understand?”

There is no one. Fine and detailed? It is more important to know what they each need to do and what their roles are, rather than getting into the messy aspect of it.

It is obvious to help each other in a party, but it is possible to create the best scenario with these people who are plenty able to take care of themselves.

“So let’s call it.”

“It’s a bother to go looking for it.”

"I agree. It's something for us to be thankful for if it comes looking for us on its own."

The decision has been made.

They will call the Caicus. It would be better if 1 came, but they do not care even if there are 2. As long as they have an appropriate place for battle, all they have to do is use force.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung selected an open space where they would be able to go into a concentrated attack if surrounded by mutants.

He thought about the Caicus. A narrow space is bad for it, but it also becomes restricted for the party. He would rather fight so that neither side has that handicap.

If it shows its desire to kill, mutants will be too scared to come out of the buildings. Kawods will be the same, won't they?

4:2 is a perfect match. The party has become so strong that a 600,000 point mission does not scare them. It is true that the level of difficulty is relative.

[Are you ready?]

Park Jin Hyuk raises his thumb from the roof of a 7 floor

building. He distracts the Caicus with his Head Hunter. The 3 people will lead the main battle.

“Let’s start.”

Koharu and Violet breathe. They shake the anxiety and fill that with confidence instead. The two emotions mixed to harmonize their thoughts.

Bang!

Wiing!

Cha Jun Sung threw a noise grenade. It flew hundreds of meters and made noise. If they see a reaction, they will narrow the distance and make it come to them.

Kyak!

As the noise grenade cut off, the mutants made a fuss at the phenomenon. It is out of the blue in the middle of the night.

“It’ll take the bait 100%. It’s pride won’t allow for intruders.”

There are a few reasons for it if it does not take the bait. It either cannot come or is not here, but it must be here because there is a mission.

Kung!

It is intense and thick. A giant's scratchy roar encroaches the closed area and the chirping mutants quiet.

They were frightened off by the sound of a predator. All living beings treasure their lives, so they must disappear if they are weak.

Bang bang!

Boom boom!

“It’s coming.”

A building collapses and debris flies out. They can hear the screams of the mutants living there. It viciously destroys everything in its path.

“Why is it overdoing it so much?”

Park Jin Hyuk can see the Caicus from his high position.

It is pretty far. Over 1km. He is able to make it out because of the battlesuit’s abilities and the Caicus’ size.

Wiing!

Noise grenades show it the way. Its strides are large, so it goes 1km within seconds. Its body became clear once it was only 100km away.

“It’s not that one.”

Its looks are indistinguishable from a human or animal. But the atmosphere of its physical characteristics are subtly different.

Is it alone? Good. 4:1 – it will only take 10 minutes to handle it if the 4 of them go. Taking them on one by one is better for the party’s safety.

Grr!

“..... Well it was good while it lasted.”

Boom!

A giant monster jumped down from the trees and grass behind Cha Jun Sung. A diversion tactic, they are caught in the rear.

A heavy tree is uprooted and flung across. Cha Jun Sung’s group leapt away to avoid being hit.

Tatang!

Park Jin Hyuk shoots. The Head Hunter's bullets are unable to pierce through the Caicus' skin and bounce off. The Caicus is one of the highest of physically strong mutants.

It is an upper level 5 on strength, stamina, armor, and bodily characteristics alone, but it cannot be at the top with just a sturdy body.

That is where the Caicus falls short 2%. There is a better balance as the level becomes higher. Getting closer to level 7 is nearing perfection.

Level 8 is where they become perfect, and level 9 transcends perfection. The Caicus cannot reach the highest level.

“It’s show time.”

Papapat!

It is the one from then – the one that squeezed potential Lifers into a pulp. As soon as Cha Jun Sung pulled back, Koharu and Violet ran forward.

Their opponents were automatically decided.

It is a coincidence that the Caicus that the Cha Jun Sung met approached them from the back. Diversion tactic? It is not related to using their minds.

Not too long ago, the Caicus brothers claimed the area because mutants of comparable strength came near the Closed Area.

A boundary formed around the area. They only met and did not overlap directly, so they just watched each other and pretended the other were not there.

But this guy, no this girl was a female but mated somewhere and had children. Dozens of them at that – it was like cell division.

They grew and became level 3 at some point. Mutants do not have a sense of level, but they instinctively determine strength.

The Caicus brothers felt danger. What if they grow and get unbelievably powerful?

Even if it does not get to that point, they are a bother because there are so many of them. They need to take care of them while they can.

Area invasion. It would not have mattered if they had not known, but if they did it knowingly, they have practiced more than 50% of the intent to kill that area's owner.

They exterminated them – ripped them apart into pieces. The mother is as strong as the Caicus brothers, but they could handle the children by bleeding them out because they are immature.

It is just that one of the brothers went back to its usual area and one stayed behind to make the area stronger.

That is when Cha Jun Sung entered and set off the noise grenades.

It had wanted to avoid battling for the time being as it is almost completely recovered but the enemy had appeared, so it was extremely angry and acted more wildly than it normally did.

The other Caicus was coming back when the enemy appeared, so it quieted its movement and sandwiched them.

They had unknowingly exposed their backs to them, but nothing has changed.

They already had it in mind that they might need to take on 2 at the same time. The important thing in this situation is only whether or not they win.

\*\*\*

Bang!

It is above average strength, 100 times that of humans. It swings a large tree around as though it is a stick. Each time they avoid it, there is wind pressure that sounds like it is tearing through the air.

Just like in the virtual version and training room, the Caicus has the human form and employs its extensions well.

It is a tricky weapon when even the weak use it, but it is even cunning when it is with a strong mutant. Its attack range is so wide that they cannot even approach it.

“Do you remember me?”

Kung!

His face is covered by the battlesuit. Even if he were not wearing it, the Caicus would not remember a human's face. Cha Jun Sung knows this as well.

“The repair costs are a waste, but shall we see some blood?”

The part around the battlesuit's eyes flash. The battle core thunders. He is going to reproduce the battle from the training room.

Bang!

The tree flashes like an arrow in the speed it is thrown. Cha Jun Sung did not move and faced it instead. It happened in a very short moment.

A kick from his left leg drives force from the booster and bursts

through the middle of the tree. The obstacle disappears and the Caicus' chest is wide open.

"Take one... no a bunch."

Wiing!

Bang bang bang bang!

Cha Jun Sung approached, stuck to it, and went for the unprotected stomach.

Dozens of stabs went into the steel muscle and gave intense shock. He felt repulsive force against the rubber-like toughness, but he did not give in.

Kuk!

The Caicus straightened its chest and inflated. It is like a wall is coming at him. Cha Jun Sung went flinging out at the unexpected attack.

Bang bang bang!

[Impact 7.5t, battlesuit damage rate 3.9%, system is shaking.]

Chest bump? Stomach bump? There was an error in

functionality with an attack that is not use the arms or legs. It would be something to see if he gets caught and thrown.

Tap tap.

Grrr!

The Caicus strokes its stomach. It is bruised. After dozens of blows that could scrap a car, it was only left with bruises.

“It hurts, right?”

They cannot converse, but he can tell that it is in pain. The Caicus’ body is hard. He can only beat it as though he is tendering meat.

He has not taken the Wolf Kill out yet. Its cutting force is incredible but because it is a level D weapon, the energy will drop quickly with that steel lump.

The Caicus had even broken it during training. He intends to use it at a decisive moment. When he can wound it even if he cannot kill it?

Tatang!

Bullets fired from the Head Hunter bother the Caicus’ face. There is an effect because it is comparatively weaker than the muscle

armor it has.

Bang!

A grenade comes flying. The Caicus is covering its face, so the grenade explodes against its unprotected stomach. Fragments fly and scratch its skin.

Even after the grenade's impact, the Caicus' stomach is fine. The bulging muscles absorbed the shock.

“It’s time to change you too.”

Park Jin Hyuk flew up with the booster and moved to another building. The Caicus threw the building debris around and roared, but could not find him.

Cha Jun Sung is flitting around from below while Park Jin Hyuk is bothering him from above. It is being driven mad by the tantalization.

“That side’s doing well.”

Papapat!

Park Jin Hyuk bought time, allowed Cha Jun Sung some freedom in his movement.

Koharu and Violet are battling much more easily because they are a team of 2. It is obvious that they have the advantage.

Koharu circled the Caicus and concentrated on attacking its lower body while Violet did not think about such things and faced it head on.

Their combat styles are distinctive.

Cha Jun Sung rolled on the ground. The Caicus left Park Jin Hyuk and tried to grab at him. Is it trying to squeeze him like it did with the drunk person last time?

Papat!

It does not adjust its power. There is no room for doubt. It is clearly trying to kill him. It has accepted the fact that Cha Jun Sung is small but powerful.

Tatatang!

It decided on a target. He put Park Jin Hyuk aside and only goes after Cha Jun Sung.

‘It’s fast!’

A giant 10m tall flies up like a butterfly and shoots forward like a bee. It is faster than when it was coming at him with a tree. It has

various methods of attacking because it has joints.

It must have a lot of experience fighting because it does not just push forward with its strength, and instead changes its position in a timely manner to make Cha Jun Sung dizzy.

“Damn it!”

He falls behind in basic physical aspects even with a battlesuit, so his bare hands are not enough. He took the Wolf Kill out and swiped it horizontally.

A solid line is drawn across its chest and blood flows out. The Caicus is surprised and crosses its arms to protect the wound. The bruising and blood are incomparable.

‘It’s shallow. It didn’t touch the muscle and only cut the skin a little.’

To compare in terms of humans, it is like making a cut on the finger with a box cutter. It is not truly like that, but there is almost no damage.

Kung?

The Caicus rubs the blood. It is frequently wounded these days.

It is not easy for mutants to easily get past seeing blood. The

strong do not see blood. Why? Because they are strong. Only the weak see blood.

The Caicus' eyes become red. It is going mad. Lifers say that it is going bezerk, and this is where it is a true Caicus.

It puffs out its muscles. As though composed of tens of thousands of threads, the rhythm is clear.

The wound that Cha Jun Sung made becomes covered with the tightened muscles. In battlesuit terms, this is like employing 100% of the power.

It cannot maintain this for a long period of time because it has gathered all of its internal strength in one place, but its battling power is stronger than usual for a short time.

Kung!

As one Caicus roared, the other one went crazy as well. Well, the situation on the other side was worse off.

[Battle core 100% deployed! Booster output rate 100%, battle option in full operation!]

He had not won once against a Caicus of normal strength in the training room. It is too difficult to take on with a basic type battlesuit.

However, it is not a one-on-one this time. Park Jin Hyuk is covering him from the top of a building. He will not be able to avoid getting hurt, but he will not lose.

“We’ll start going through level C with this mission as a starting point.”

They will go forward on skill and reduce the number of workers. The important thing is advancement. Though they have a lot of points, they cannot purchase items from the upper level store.

Knock knock.

Boom!

The Caicus drools as it walks toward him. Its face is full of confidence and eyes say death. From looks alone, it is a bigger monster than the devil.

“Die for me.”

Become a small step for a high place called advancement.

# Chapter 124

---

Violet's javelin came at full power and buried in the Caicus' heart as it was on its knees. It is so hard that it did not go through.

Boom boom!

[You have earned 200,000 points and 80,000 achievement points.]

Koharu made the lower body into rags. She chopped it up like as though she were cutting up meat. The lower body is the center of mobility. It is just a figurehead if that collapses.

Hah!

Thump!

Koharu sits down. Her battlesuit's energy is under 10%. She can just charge the energy, but she needs to rest in order to regain her bodily strength.

Violet was also standing up by leaning on the javelin as if it is a cane. She is not severely hurt anywhere. She is only tired as if she has run a long distance.

Ah!

Swish!

A meteor falls. The booster multiplied the speed of falling.

Cha Jun Sung became a ray of light and passed by the Caicus, cutting its shoulder in a moment of inertia. Due to this, his shoulder muscle was ruptured.

Bang!

The Caicus held back the awful pain and punched Cha Jun Sung. The impact could crumple the battlesuit, and he was pushed back as though he could drag through the ground.

Boom boom boom!

Grenades dig in where its arm is cut off and its shoulder is showing.

It may be tough on the outside, but there is nothing to do about the inside. Its shoulder is dug into and red flesh splatters out. The amount of bleeding is enough for 4 or 5 people to die.

The Caicus stumbles. Bleeding out is one thing, but he is blinded by this kind of extreme pain it is feeling for the first time. Is this death? Is it dying?

Park Jin Hyuk pours out the attacks. Cha Jun Sung is not in that

great of a state either.

He took all of the hits head on unlike Koharu and Violet. He had not been able to protect his body properly like the state of the battlesuit.

With repeated attacks on its weakness, its shoulder rips. Its other parts are still hard and tough. There is no point in attacking those places.

The Caicus falls over. As it is a giant, it took a long time.

It is not dead. If they leave it alone, it can live even though it will be handicapped. It may be weaker than before, but it it will still be able to bring out the strength of a level 5.

Cha Jun Sung dragged his ruptured shoulder and broken leg near the Caicus' brain, and embedded the Wolf Kill in its eye.

The Caicus trembled with hollow eyes and then stopped breathing.

[Congratulations. You have cleared level C mission Closed Area. You have earned 200,000 points and 100,000 achievement points. With mission completion, you have earned 600,000 reward points and 300,000 achievement points.]

Park Jin Hyuk, Kyoko, and Hercules came down to the battlefield. They are fine but 3 battle personnel are about to

collapse – no – they have collapsed.

However, there is still a result. They left their reserve power as is and completed a 600,000 point mission without issues. This means that they can afford to do more.

“It’s a single shot even though it’s a level C, so we were able to finish it in a day.”

“We need to pick out missions like this, though it is a disadvantage that it’s so tiring.”

They need to repair their battlesuits and weapons, and they need to rest for a few days.

As short as the time for completion is, the greater the danger is. That is why they need to be careful. But it is still more comfortable than an ongoing mission.

“Let’s go back. I’m sure everyone will be able to purchase the weapons they want if we just do a few more?”

Violet is fine for now because she has a 3 million point weapon.

The problem is Cha Jun Sung’s group. They realized for sure while fighting with the Caicus that they need to get rid of level D now. Level C has become more desperate.

“It’ll be quick.”

There is not long left once the points they already have and the points they earned in Closed Area are combined. And as long as they are purchasing, they will be buying other items.

\*\*\*

He attacked Closed Area, the mission he had vowed to complete, with perfection. It had not even been difficult. It is proof of how much he has advanced.

Cha Jun Sung went in and out of 500,000 to 700,000 point missions with his party members because of the time limit and to purchase other items.

If levels D and E are just tastes of Life Mission, level C is where they can really start seeing the super scientific abilities in the items.

There is no longer any need to fight with battlesuits and vibrating weapons.

If they have a lot of points, they can become owners of artifacts they see in fantasy stories. It is just that they are created with science instead of magic.

They each want different gear because everyone’s style of battling is different, but there are 3 things that they all want in the

level C store.

[Protect ring: 6 million points, 1.2 million achievement.] [Description: A ring that forms a magnetic field defense with a 3 meter radius, with maintenance time and strength determined by energy emission.] [Rapid charging device: 5 million points, 1 million achievement.] [Description: An upgrade on the average charger, this is able to charge the basic battlesuit to 100% in 10 minutes.] [Emergency return portal: 7.5 million points, 1.5 million achievement.] [Description: Once every month, it is possible to abandon a mission under level B without restrictions regarding rules set by the assistant.]

They need 30 to 40 million points for the time limit, 3 things, and other items. The serious aspect is that this is Cha Jun Sung alone.

With 5 people, it is a total of 150 million! Assuming they switch their equipment over time like in the virtual version, there is no end.

They are short by a lot, so Cha Jun Sung's group put their all into missions.

After working for a few weeks, their cumulative existing and gathered points reached 15 million. They thought for a bit and then purchased the time limit and protect ring.

Excluding Violet, the party members also finished setting to top level C weapons. Their power had increased even more.

As a result, they completed a 950,000 point attainment mission within 2 days yesterday. 4 level 5s appeared, but they each took on 1.

They each received 1.5 million reward points. It would be good if they achieved this each time, but their energy is low because they have been working hard.

Cha Jun Sung stopped activity so that they could rest, but there had been a lot of changes in Mechanic City while they were focused on missions.

First, the inflow of people into Mechanic City had multiplied by more than 10. Lifers had begun to enter in earnest with differences in time.

Is that why? There are more instances of people looking for real estate, places to live.

Therefore, Cha Jun Sung used his remaining points to purchase properties located on the path from where he is, zone A area 25, to area 24.

His party members followed suit. Violet in particular, used the Florence clan's power to basically absorb area 25.

No matter how trivial of an area it is, each area has a representative center. The center of area 25 is the way to cross into area 24.

It is because facilities are there. Lifers who want to reside in area 25 will try to get near area 24.

Fortunately for all Cha Jun Sung knows, the count for large guilds in zone A is low.

Even if they are there, they are late and Cha Jun Sung's group was moving one step ahead. His goal is clear. He cannot take over an entire zone and area.

Cha Jun Sung wants the 5 training rooms in areas 1 through 5 of a zone. They are scarce, so he will somehow scrape up the points to buy them.

The cheapest training room in area 5 is 120 million points. If he keeps this pace up however, it is not impossible.

Other large guilds are focused on other zones and are not paying attention to zone A. It is a large piece of land without an owner. It is the key to a niche market.

While Cha Jun Sung was just hanging out, something happened that would gain the attention of all Lifers including himself.

It happened quietly, but the stirring became the beginning of an auction war.

\*\*\*

“There are a lot. Shall we go?”

A man in his mid-30s mumbles as he looks at dozens of lucky boxes.

They are what he has gathered until now by riding buses. He is a typical bus Lifer. He is able to count the number of mutants he has killed on his own with one hand.

He focused on using the reward points to increase his wealth in reality. He knows his place well. It is impossible for him to fight a mutant and survive.

No one dies pleasantly after not knowing their place and getting involved. Lifers and friends who entered the reality version around the same time screamed.

If he had gone through missions normally? There is nothing that says the same would not have happened to him.

Even still, he persisted in missions and became a level C Lifer a few days ago. This is not as easy as one would think. There needs to be luck to cruise through it.

Ring!

He opens a lucky box. He had gathered them as a hobby. He has exactly 42. He was going to sell them, but decided to open them for fun.

His expression goes sour. He heard that they have a terrible probability.

Opinions on lucky boxes are plastered with swears and insults on Lifer World. They are called 1 second boxes. It only takes 1 second to change \$100,000 into 1 cent.

That was true. After 30 seconds, 30 boxes became worth 30 cents. Tissue, ramen, a bullet, a pencil.

“Ugh. I just wasted \$4.2 million.”

If he had sold them as is, they would have brought him enough to buy a mansion. It is all about to disappear. He just has 3 lucky boxes left.

He earns about 3 million in a month, has over 20 million saved, and can raise more from now on, but the disappearing 4.2 million in front of him seems like a waste.

Ring!

[What! No way!]

“Huh? Why are you surprised?”

When he opened the 2nd lucky box, the man’s helper coughed. It is possible for artificial intelligence to be surprised. It is a wonder as to what surprised it.

“What is this? Is it a card? Argos, did you see this and get surprised?”

The man picked up the black card in the lucky box and scanned it on the PDA. He could just ask his helper, but he can also do this.

[Top store opening card.] [Description: If you put this card in the PDA, you can open a higher store than Lifers that are higher up can.]

“..... Open a store?”

The man cocks his head. He is a level C Lifer. One level? Is he able to take a look at the level B store with this card?

It seems like a good thing, but it is not completely to his liking. What is he supposed to do after opening it? Even the level C store has items that are priced at millions of points.

If it is level B, it will reach over that. There is no point in it for him.

Ring!

The man opens the last lucky box. This time, a 300 point pistol came out. Ultimately, all he got out of this is this strange card.

[There's a 1 out of 10 million chance.....]

"You're saying there's a 1 in 10 million chance to pick out this card? No way!"

[I'll have to tell you since you don't understand what that card is. It has a value that could shake up the balance in Life Mission.]

Helper Argos is making a fuss. A card to open up the top store, the name and description are simple. On the other hand, its true meaning is not that simple.

It is in the description, but not included in the conditions. It may be garbage that opens up level D in level E, but it is a treasure that opens up level B in level C.

If he uses it in level B.....?

[It opens level A. According to the circumstances, it could even open up S.] [A Lifer's power comes from the store. Rather than being a step ahead of others, you could transcend an entire level ahead of everyone.]

It might be unattainable to the man as he thought, but it is an invaluable treasure to a Lifer with ability.

What would happen if this fell into the hands of a top Lifer, someone like Cha Jun Sung?

There is just one chance. If they gather as many points as they can to go through level B body modifications and purchased items from the store, there is no guess as to how far they could advance.

“So this is an incredible thing?”

[It is beyond that. You are someone who has come out above atrocious probabilities. If you decide to take the path of a Lifer now, you could come out on top.]

He is falling far behind as a level C, so he cannot catch up to rankers.

But if he continues with level 2 body modifications and purchases a battlesuit to gain experience, the card will handle the rest.

Even if Argos cannot tell him, level B mission will become Lifers' graves when they need to start fighting mutants that are nearly perfect level 7s.

Only those who advance and show potential for advancement will go to the top.

“I have to sell it.”

[Se – sell it? You’re going to sell that? What are you selling?]

If Argos had been human, it would have fainted from high blood pressure. He is going to sell the card! This is an action that helpers cannot understand.

“You think I’m crazy? If level C has level 5 and 6, isn’t level B level 7? I know from the virtual version that I can’t handle them. I’m going to sell this for a high price.”

[\*&^\*%\$\$\$\$#\$^\*\*\*^(%\$\$##.)]

The man did not want to hear Argos screaming, and shut the PDA off. He made his decision regarding the card.

It is true that it makes him ambitious, but he does not want to get caught up in a dream and take a rash challenge. He will sell it for a high price. He will hand it over to rankers or a large guild.

# Chapter 125

---

[Writer: Anonymous]

[Title: Top Store Opening Card]

[Subject: I am attaching a certified description from my helper. It is a card that allows the owner to open a store of a level higher than the one he can access now. I will create a group chat room under helper name Argos on the designated date. We can discuss in detail there.]

[Crazy!]

[Is this a joke? A top store opening card? Who's he trying to scam!]

[Are you blind? There's certification from a helper. It's real.]

[So it opens level B when used in level C?]

[Rankers and large guilds are going to go nuts. What is the selling method going to be like?]

There are tens of thousands of comments. There are also Lifers in large guilds who monitor. Information is relayed through them in real-time.

All of the comments were hot, but the most interest lay in the method of buying it and its price. It is an item that warrants kidnapping while trying to sell.

It is better to filter through the people in a group chat room and go through with a deal from there. It would be better to do this in reality than it would be in Mechanic City.

Since direct trading is impossible, the owner needs to cope with it or get paid a reasonable price.

Everyone agrees that the number one item in the Level C store is the battlesuit. Even with 10 battlesuits combined, they do not reach the potential power of the card.

It is not an item that should appear at this point. It has a worth that destroys common sense!

Even if a normal transaction is not possible, he will try to do it anyway. The large guilds who already got this news were moving in the dark.

He will decide on a price after discussing its worth in an autonomous meeting. It will be in points or items.

Cha Jun Sung, who had been spending his time leisurely, showed interest as well. He needs the card too. It is the perfect opportunity to remodel his battlesuit.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung looks through the notebook in haste. He is looking here and there to see if there is any information on the card.

“December 2021.....”

December 23, the day the writing came up. He looked for the date. The group chat room was opened on the 27th. There are 10,000 people.

“This is it.”

Cha Jun Sung skimmed the text with his finger. There are only a few short lines that lack sincerity, but there is mention of it.

[December 23, 2021. The beginning of an auction war in Lifer World.]

[December 27, 2021. A group chat opens with 10,000 people and Lifers gain interest to start a bidding competition.]

[He wants to be paid with something that has the value of the card.]

[January 4, 2022. Expected to take an official position in the world federation, but died under the Blood Kingdom's attack. Card missing.]

Cha Jun Sung kept his eyes wide open for any special information. The main point is missing. This is weak. He needs a link to the seller.

[Zone H area 1. The incident occurs on the roadside to Black City.]

It does not have a description of the seller, but it does say when and where the incident occurs. He is better off than others with just this.

“Why did he ask to meet here? It would have been more comfortable to meet in a mission.”

It is safe inside a mission. They can be free from others' eyes. They would not have been interrupted if they decided on a place to meet in a level E mission.

Cha Jun Sung thought about it from the seller's point and interpreted it as an ‘official meeting with a world federation,’ especially the ‘official meeting’ part.

It is the same as intending to go through with the deal where others are watching. It would have been harder for the world federation to believe as interest became more focused.

Since it is official, an open location is the obvious choice. It is highly likely that Blood Kingdom killed him by accident while trying to attack him in order to steal the card away from him.

Cha Jun Sung memorized the contents and closed the notepad. There is nothing more to look at.

If his predictions are correct, the seller was doing something foolish. But he cannot admonish him. Humans are not beings who always make the correct judgement.

\*\*\*

Blood Kingdom will definitely be involved. Rankers are bound to be interested. The card opens up level B at the least. It is a boosting item.

[This is seller Argos. I ask that we go through with a smooth auction.]

As though planned, not a single person spoke. They all wanted him to hurry up and start. Argos was almost embarrassed.

[I don't know where to start because it is impossible to make a point transaction. There isn't a determined market, so I'll hear the conditions first.]

The Lifers could not speak up easily. They must be iffy about laying their cards on the table first.

Though not visible to the eye, it is obvious that they are all wary

of each other. They can determine the approximate standard through the first offer.

‘I didn’t mean to, but I guess we’ll be able to see the bottom of a large guild.’

Cha Jun Sung does not fall behind as an individual, but he is at a disadvantage in numbers. There is nothing he can do if they come at him with numbers of people.

In the case of a large guild, the card will belong to the master. How many points will they have accumulated? How much would guild members be willing to sacrifice?

“Will large guilds in the world federation work together or separately?”

Park Jin Hyuk is asking. Cha Jun Sung’s group is gathered in zone A area 25’s park. There is no restriction on their actions because the auction is being done through a chat.

“That’ll be different based on the situation. I’m sure they came up with a plan amongst themselves.”

“What?”

“They’ll hide their cards and play separately and then come together if the card is about to go into the hands of a random person. No one can beat the world federation in normal ways.”

It is a supergiant that holds 40% of rankers. Whether they go at it as individuals or a group, they have the quality and quantity to take anything on.

“If I can’t have it, I’d rather let my ally have it than an enemy?”

If an ally has it, I can benefit from it. If rankers gather around a powerful individual, advancing level C is a definite and they can even go after level B.

“The comparison is appropriate.”

“Can we win like this? Blood Kingdom is second in influence to the world federation. We’ll have to stay quiet.”

The only person with personal power in this party is Violet. Even so, her clan falls far behind Blood Kingdom.

It is a PK group with 6 or 7 rankers. And what is the world federation like when it is more rigid? They need to go after the win with something that is not material.

‘No matter how I look at it, normal tactics are a disadvantage for me. I have no choice but to employ an expedient.’

He does not have the ability to outbid the competition when they are large guilds. He is thinking of doing what only he is capable of

doing.

[Hello. I am Touvergon of Black Song from Spain.]

Black Song, the representative of a nation just like Korea's Seven Stars.

If it has a fault, it is that it does not have any rankers? There are 2 rankers in Spain, but they are not in the guild. They work individually and in the world federation.

[I will pay with 3 level C items and 20 million points.]

The man is trying his best. His effort is clear. His offer is obviously impressive, but it is lacking to hand over ownership of the card.

[Our guild.....]

[We also.....]

Once one person spoke up, the dam broke and the bid competition finally started.

First is the individual competition They all became enemies and tried to move the seller's heart by revealing the best benefits that their respective guilds could provide.

The true competitors did not get involved in the beginning. The meat needs to cook before they can be the ones to eat it.

Tens of millions of points are discussed as though a joke. Even the great masters are going over the amounts that they can spend individually. The entire guild is going to get stuck.

There is no difficulty in this because all they need to do is to let a few people on their bus. There is not much of a difference in the offers that they are making.

‘The seller isn’t saying a word. Does he feel that there is nothing worth responding to?’

It is the opposite. Argos is rendered speechless by the bidding competition. Items that he could not have even dreamed of as a bus Lifer are being poured down on him.

The battlesuit, the most popular item in level C, is the basic option. Brazil’s guild says that they will push him for 30 million points. How much is that if he exchanges that for money?

1 point is \$20. The market has fallen a lot, but 30 million points \$600 million. 3 generations could live comfortably without doing missions.

Argos is more surprised that there is no ceiling to the offers. He suspects that this may never end.

# Chapter 126

---

Whew!

Kyoko rubbed her hands together and breathed out. Her actions show how the party feels. Violet shakes her head as well.

She would make the same offers too if she could become the owner of the card. The problem is that there is nothing that distinguishes her from the other large guilds.

Say they took the top 20 students in a class and created a class of their own. Will all of them be in 1st place? It is not so. They become separated into 1st through 20th places.

Based on this principle, this chat room is a gathering of the 1st places.

The Florence clan is one of the groups with the most influence in England, but they are just considered pretty impressive in the scope of the world.

{I am the world federation's Uranos, a.k.a. Strategist of the 36 rankers.}

{What! Strategist!}

{K!}

When Strategist appeared, the chat room cooled down.

He is a Lifer who was known for his intelligence in Life Mission. Since he has just gotten involved after watching, he must have something that can flip the whole ordeal over.

{I won't waste my time talking about items or points. If it isn't unreasonable, we'll hear out your demands.}

{Whatever it is? What are you going to do if I ask for you to push for 1 billion points to me.}

{1 billion!}

{Ho ho!}

Argos spoke for the first time since the bidding began. Does he want 1 billion points? The Lifers are taken aback at the nonsensical number.

However, Strategist's response was more surprising.

{We will put you in the ranker party. You should be able to gather that much in a couple years.}

Strategist looked to the future. 1 billion? It is impossible to push that much to him in a short period of time. But if they open level A

or B stores with the card?

They advance and go into level B. Reward points will skyrocket to over tens of millions. The issue becomes time, not the points.

It is an internal secret, but the world federation already reached 1 million points.

They also fought against level 6 a few times. It took 6 rankers to take on 1. If it was strong, 10 rankers would face it. Strategist felt it.

If they want to advance, the force needs to have battlesuits even if they are not rankers. He has the same thinking as Cha Jun Sung in various aspects.

2 weeks ago in a 1.1 million point mission, 2 low level 6s and 7 high level 5s had come out at the same time. It was the greatest danger they had felt in the mission.

15 rankers were caught up by 9 level 5 and 6 mutants, and 12 took on 2 level 6s. They still could not handle it.

Since it was not a situation where they could face off one-on-one, Strategist enlisted support from 85 Lifers they had brought in as auxiliary power.

The ranker power was half killed and 40 regular Lifers died.

There were even 5 with battlesuits among the 40. Think about it. How many level 5 and 6s would come out in a 2 million point mission?

Strategist thought hard about how to advance safely, but danger and sacrifice were inevitable. This is it. This is when the card that would relieve him of his worries appeared.

There is just one chance. They will accumulate as many points as they can and open the store.

They will go through body modification, upgrade their battlesuits, and purchase the items that they each need. If they just advance to level B, rankers will be able to figure the rest out for themselves.

Whatever they do, whether it is labor, it is not difficult to gather specs again.

‘The world federation will take the card.’

The competition is fair. Other large guilds have the right to participate.

However, they cannot hand it over to those who cannot even get past level C. They will use everything available to them and take it even if they have to overdo themselves.

{Of the offers proposed, the world federation's is the best.}

Argos' mind is the same. There is no guild that can offer more than the world federation can.

Everyone who can be is gathered. Rather than dragging it along with his ambitions, it is better to end it at the right timing and create a close relationship with the world federation.

{In addition to the points, we intend to support you with level C items and create a small position for you with the world federation as is within my authority. Please reference.}

Following Strategist, the large guilds put their tails down. The scale of this is different. It felt like they would be buried to death if they tried to keep digging in.

{Uh. Is Nine Tail in the world federation as well?}

{No, but I will try to arrange for a meeting if I can.}

Life Mission's rankers are a target of envy. Argos personally likes Nine Tail's ability to use 9 skills freely.

Strategist caught on that Argos is a fan of Nine Tails.

{Tha – thank you.}

{We'll push 2 billion points for you if you give us the card. We could even completely outfit level C and B items since reward points are given to everyone.}

A third person intruded in Argos and Strategist's friendly conversation. The proposed offer is incredible. It outdoes that of the world federation.

{Introduction....?}

{Pilados, I am Death Fear of the 36 rankers.}

The chat room becomes noisy with Death Fear's entrance. It is a different reaction than there was with Strategist. For Lifers, he is one of the worst murderers they know of.

{Does Blood Kingdom want the card too? You don't know your place. Want to get in trouble?}

{Who is this?}

{Me? Nuclear. How many of you came in here? Do you want to meet and face off?}

It is a conversation between rankers. It is a fight that is as fun to watch as a fire is. Cha Jun Sung also monitored it with interest. They really were in the chat room.

{You don't think your guild is capable?}

{I'm sure you have the ability, but there's no way to know if you're willing to maintain it or not.}

{We'll maintain it.}

{Bullshit!}

Nuclear laughs. There is no way to look at them in a good light. Maintain it? It is nonsense.

PK is just another content in the virtual, but it is murder in reality. Blood Kingdom is a PK group, it might as well be a lair of killers.

What is the greatest crime in reality? Burglary? Rape? Violence? Scamming? They are all crimes, but they are lighter than murder. The weight of the sin itself is different.

To credit the words of a murderer. Not even an insane person would believe that.

{Sor – sorry, but I will leave Blood Kingdom out of the candidates for the deal.}

There are things that Argos heard about too. No matter how courageous he is acting, he does not have the pluck to go through a

deal with Blood Kingdom. They might really go through with it, but their credibility is the lowest.

The world federation is linked to countries. There is no reason for countries to try to scam him.

{You'll take us out and choose them even with this kind of offer? Think about it again.}

{Your words are full of thorns.}

Nuclear interfered. Is it because they were rejected? There is a threat in Death Fear's tone. The chat room's atmosphere becomes rough.

{Strategist, you said that your helper's name is Uranos?}

{Yes, that's right.}

{I will contact you separately. There is no reason to stay in here any longer.}

{Oh, then we will tune the details then.}

Argos ended the chat room. The Lifers showed up to the public. It was not different for Cha Jun Sung either.

“Ugh! We came out without being able to get a single word in. They’re just throwing their points at him.”

“I expected as much.”

Cha Jun Sung stretched. Their competitor is the world federation. They do not have the means to overtake them and present something that Argos would want more.

‘January 4th.’

It is the day that Argos is attacked on the Black City roadside.

He does not know how Blood Kingdom figure out who he is. The important thing is that the whereabouts of the card become unknown due to that incident.

They cannot take an item with thorough security by force. If it did not fall into the hands of Blood Kingdom, it is highly likely that it was just lost.

‘What does it matter if there are a lot of points? There’s no use for them if you die.’

He cannot match even the average for material payment, but there is something special he can give instead. That is life, Argos’ life.

Give and take.

I will save you, give me the card.

\*\*\*

“I thought it’d be impossible, but it was possible after a bit of digging.”

“Even if a helper name hides a Lifer’s identity, there are limits to it if he let loose here and there.”

Death Fear responded to Hell Sword. There had been 5 Blood Kingdom cadres in the chat room that Argos opened.

As soon as Death Fear was rejected in the chat room, he gave the seller’s helper name to the guild members as a hint and ordered them to reveal the identity. The other cadres did not apply sanctions either.

After about 4 days, they got a call from Sweden. Seller Argos’ active area is Sweden, so it is highly possible that his nationality is Swedish as well. They tracked and went on a small clue.

His mention of Nine Tail was the decisive factor. She is Swedish.

They cannot find personal information because they cannot hack into the PDA, but one Lifer said that he is a man in his early 30s

with blonde hair and blue eyes, 180cm in height, who is a bit chubby.

It is a tremendous result with just the name Argos. The exact time and location of the deal had not been decided on yet. They will find out as much as they can until then.

Everyone needs it, but Blood Kingdom also needs the card. They reached 1 million like the world federation did, but they had to quit the mission without completing it.

It seems like they need 20 people with battlesuits to be able to complete it.

The numbers are increasing by the day.

But as they aim for the top, they are not worried about now but the future.

The immediate future is 2 million points. If they get the card, they can get an advantageous footing. They cannot leave it so the world federation takes possession of it.

“If we can’t have it, neither can they.”

“Of course.”

Blood King turned his wine glass as he spoke, and Hell Sword

agreed. If the gap becomes wider, they may be overtaken. The enemy's advancement means the decline of their allies. If there is nothing they can do, they will block it with force.

“Huh?”

“What is it?”

“A location and date have been decided in Lifer World. It won't be easy.”

The cadres turned on the internet on the PDA and went on Lifer World. Just as Death Fear said, there was a message regarding the deal.

“Zone H area 1, the top floor of Black City?”

“Zone H is under the world federation's influence. You're saying we need to get through this?”

Hell Sword's tone is negative. It is inevitable. All of the rankers in the world federation will be dispatched. They have twice as many as Blood Kingdom has. They do not have the odds to win if they come face to face.

“There's no reason to make a mess.”

“Right. We can end it before he gets close to Black City. Whether

we steal it, kidnap him, or kill him.”

Dark Side gained strength from Blood King’s words. They will handle it before going inside. It would be easiest to kill him, but they will push that to the back and leave the first 2 at the top.

“January 4th.”

“He’ll move hidden among Lifers. Or with an escort troop.”

“The card.....”

Opening a higher level store. It is a treasure and lightning that has fallen from the sky out of nowhere. The world federation will have prepared as well. They need to prepare the awl to drill through their preparations.

# Chapter 127

---

It is a gigantic gymnasium. It is arranged so that tens of thousands of people can watch from spectator seats as though watching a baseball game.

Over 10 Lifers are sitting in those seats and watching the tremendous battle below.

Bang bang bang!

2 Lifers use battlesuits and are in an endless conflict.

They seem to be basic battlesuits, but one had different kinds of weapons, changing his battle style every hour, and even pulling a new weapon from his space compression bag every once in a while.

Another person had a long and wide sword to cut down weak points, but fell into a close encounter. They were England's Weapon Master and China's Chamma Sword.

“Those 2 are the only left.”

“Since they each won once, it's the final.”

Sonic Boom and Nuclear had their hands behind their heads and watched the fight.

“Who will win?”

“Chamma Sword?”

“I think it’s Weapon Master.”

This battle is a scramble for the card. There are a lot of rankers, but there is just 1 card. Someone – no – everyone except 1 person will need to give up the card.

The majority gave up possession of the card for different reasons, but 4 people did not. Weapon Master, Chamma Sword, Boom Buster, and Dual Blade.

There can be no end with words, so they decided to reach an end with the abilities of Lifers and came to fight like this.

The 1st round was Weapon Master and Dual Blade, the 2nd was Chamma Sword and Boom Buster. In each round, Weapon Master and Chamma Sword won.

The 1st round took a fair amount of time. It is because Dual Blade was strong. However, the 2nd round ended in much less time.

Boom Buster was unable to get distance in the battle against Chamma Sword and was suppressed.

The same battlesuits, body modifications, and level C items. All

conditions are the same, but the strange thing is that it was separated into ranking like in Life Mission. They were able to see the lowest rankers being pushed back by the highest.

The principles behind it are unknown, but it is like a kind of psychology. Or there is a difference in the type of person regardless of the items.

“It’s brutal.”

“There’s no choice but to be. The person who wins is the one who gets the card.”

Weapon Master is an aristocrat in England, so he does not like when others are positioned above him. That is why he cannot give up the card.

Chamma Sword? He seeks pure strength. He does not put anything to it. ‘Get stronger’. That is all.

Rankers generally gave up the card because of the burden. If one of them gets it, the others will complete missions with the card holder at the center. If that happens, level B missions and the store will open.

It is just a matter of whether it is opened first or later.

They are birds, but they want to be baby birds and not the mother birds. There is 1 card and 15 rankers. Even if they make a

fuss, 14 people become convictions. In this case, it is better to give the card up tidily and lean on 1 person.

This place now is not the inside of a mission or in reality. It is a training room in zone H. Why would they bear the danger and use weapons when they are really fighting? They can show their abilities to the fullest even if it is virtual.

“Won’t it be dangerous even if we do it in our zone? He revealed the location and date. Is he insane?”

Nuclear is grumbling. It would have been good for everyone if it had been handled quietly, but Argos had revealed the whole thing on Lifer World.

He cannot trust the world federation. He means to do the deal in a public place in front of countless Lifers.

“You can’t say that from the position of the person with the treasure.”

“It’s weird.”

“He didn’t think much of it when he didn’t know the value, but he must have seen the whole world as the enemy from the moment he found out the value.”

Strategist is a Ph.D. who majored in psychology.

In an extreme situation or when a decision needs to be made, people show 2 reactions. They either hide themselves and shrink back or open up boldly.

Argos simply thought that it would be better to reveal rather than hide it for his own safety.

‘On January 4th, a tremendous number of Lifers will gather to zone H. I’m sure they’ll come too.’

People tend to interfere in matters that are not much of a big deal. He expects that Lifers who think something interesting might happen will swarm in.

It is obvious that Blood Kingdom will also be there to try to steal the card away.

“What if he rejected an escort too?”

“He said he would come on his own. He is acting under his helper name and PDAs cannot be hacked, so unless he reveals it himself, there is no way to figure out his identity.”

“Really?”

Nuclear batted his eyes and asked. There are a lot of implications in the word ‘really’. In this circumstance, it means ‘Is that 100%

correct?’.

“..... No.”

The world federation found out that he is Swedish. There is various information beyond that.

They were going to tell Argos, but did not want him to get the wrong idea that the federation had been looking into him.

“We’re going to have 2 rankers and Lifers dispatched to each zone so that we can gather in if something happens.”

“It’s complicated. Let’s do it simply. Huh? It’s ending.”

Bang!

When Nuclear clucked his tongue, Weapon Master’s Blunt weapon hit Chamma Sword’s stomach.

The battlesuit parts shattered and flew out dozens of meters like bullets, embedding in the gymnasium wall.

Weapon Master barely steadied himself and moved to end it. Chamma Sword did not even budge.

\*\*\*

Chamma Sword was embedded in the wall and fell to the ground.

He did not move from his knees and looked for the chance to counterattack.

Weapon Master and he are on the brink of being logged out. Their battlesuits have been destroyed and their bodies inside have reached their limits.

The training room is a type of game. If this was real, they would have felt tremendous pain. Right now, it is just a sting.

Chamma Sword stuck his sword. Weapon Master slowly approaches him from the front.

‘If he just wins....’

If he gets the card and overturns the ranking, he will become the strongest ranker of the rankers in the world federation. He can see 3 effects with 1 win.

‘I’m going to win.’

Weapon Master thought the same thing. No one likes to lose. He has never lost before. He was born to a noble family and won in whatever he put his hand in.

The only thing he lost in was Life Mission. 2nd place ranking. He is not in 1st place on the ranking. He fought Overload to try to raise his ranking, but he lost and joined the reality version. He needs to look forward and keep moving.

Excluding him, Chamma Sword is the highest in the world federation, coming in 7th place. That is why he can come this far and fight against him.

‘The last is this guy.’

A long sword comes out.

It is the sword he can handle best of all of the weapons he has.

The moment he nears, Chamma Sword is sure to attack. He wants to end it easily from afar with a bow, but his pride will not allow for that.

Papat!

After he walked about 10 meters, Weapon Master activated his booster and narrowed the distance in high speed. Following that, Chamma Sword pulled his sword and brandished it upward.

Chamma Sword’s sword cut Weapon Master’s arm. Weapon Master barely moved his body to the side and avoided having the sword cut across his chest. Weapon Master’s sword penetrated the opponent’s heart.

“I won. Ten xiao.”

“I lost.”

Chamma Sword’s body starts to fade. It shows he is being logged out as the training mode ends.

“Weapon Master won. Once the card deal is over, he is the card’s owner.”

As soon as Strategist said that, he logged out. The owner has been decided. All that is left is the matter of getting the card.

# Chapter 128

---

Only 10,000 people entered Mechanic City at first.

With time, this number grew exponentially. Struggling Lifers were finally getting over the subtle boundary they were caught on.

That number is now over 10,000. It will become stagnant later, but it is expanding by the thousands according to the current trend.

Is it still a small number compared to the amount of area, but the situation is better than when they are alone in the area. If they just walk a little, they will run into several people.

January 4th. Zone H area 1.

Tens of thousands of Lifers are gathering to Black City. The world federation will be getting the card from Argos with everyone watching today.

It is a place where an incredible number of people are watching. They cannot have other thoughts.

The world federation had no thoughts of doing that, but people do not have the same thoughts. Honestly, Lifers were hoping that the deal would not go through.

They have the foolish dream that an opportunity might come to them.

There is no decided time. They decided that if Strategist is waiting in Black City, he will go at random to go through with the deal.

As is evident from this, Argos is considering his safety the top priority. It is a pity that he is so suspicious.

“How is it?”

“There really are a lot of people. Lifers are waiting in Black City’s vicinity.”

Park Jin Hyuk is watching the situation in Black City as per Cha Jun Sung’s request.

It is a big crowd. Any place where people can rest like restaurants, cafes, and parks, are full of people. There are even people standing in alleys and on the street.

“Jun Sung, what are you thinking?”

“I think something is going to happen.”

Koharu asked what she is curious about, but Cha Jun Sung just spoke vaguely. The party is waiting on the road where Argos is

supposed to be attacked.

It is located about 30 minutes away from Black City. It is the time that it would take not on foot, but with transportation or battle suit.

“A force in the world federation is waiting every distance, and it seems like they’re concerned about security. There is a significant number of people with battle suits as well.”

As the head of the force, Strategist will have dispatched rankers just in case. He would have handled it well because he is smart.

‘This is clearly the optimal place.’

The roadside is relatively quiet. It is a good place to attack. Argos is not a strong user. He is a bus Lifer. He does not have stark protective means, so is weak enough to be overpowered if left defenseless.

Blood Kingdom’s influence is rigid, but they cannot go out into an all out war with the world federation.

Even if it is Mechanic City, which does not reach a nation’s power.

It is a place where they can end it with a swift attack. If rankers belatedly realize the situation and rush in, it will already be too late. That is why they lost the card.

‘Hercules will take Argos away. How long will the 5 of us be able to hold them off for?’

This is the strategy. Once they see Argos, Hercules will fall back. Then, they will buy time and go towards Black City.

If they fight in one place, they will run out of supplies. Blood Kingdom’s side has more rankers and they have a lot of people with battle suits, so they cannot even run away. They need to go as much as the world federation comes.

‘10 to 15 minutes according to a simple calculation.’

Since both sides are narrowing the distance, they will have to withstand 15 minutes.

‘I’ll be at the very front.’

It is a dangerous mission. Since it is something that he himself is bringing onto them, he will take responsibility for the front.

‘Since we can’t recognize him first, we’ll wait until they move first.’

Cha Jun Sung does not know Argos’ identity. He does not know how but if the Blood Kingdom attacks him, it means that they know who Argos is.

A large number of people are needed to take on world federation Lifers. If hundreds appear near the road, it will be immediately recognizable.

Cha Jun Sung's group is watching below from the roof of a 40 floor building. They can get caught, but it does not matter. It is probable that Blood Kingdom will just pass by because they have their focus on Argos. They will have no idea that Cha Jun Sung's group will provide an obstacle to them.

'When is he coming.'

Cha Jun Sung is getting fresh air while waiting for a sign.

Koharu, Kyoko, and Violet do not show signs of fear of a dangerous situation, and are chatting amongst themselves. Park Jin Hyuk is the only loner.

\*\*\*

Papat!

Blood Kingdom mobilized thousands of guild members for the seize operation. They spread out wide and blocked the entrances into Black City.

They have not made it impossible to get into Black City. If they

do that, the world federation will pressure them by widening their protection range.

Blood Kingdom only watched. They compared the appearances of people entering Black City to Argos. The world federation knows this as well, but they only defended the inside more and did not try to push Blood Kingdom out. They think that it is fine to leave them since there is no room for them to challenge.

“What a drag. Will we even be able to find him?”

“We’ll have to.”

Hell Sword sighed out of boredom. Dark Side said something without heart and watched the Lifers walking below them.

Death Fear and Palbi Blood, and Blood King and Makung got into pairs and watched their assigned areas. The pairs were designated by style.

They are in the same guild, but there are those who cannot mix like water and oil. Palbi Blood and Blood King are the types who cannot mix.

Dark Side is about 700 meters from Cha Jun Sung. It is a distance where they are not discovered in a field scan or search and they are unidentifiable by the naked eye, so they do not know of each other’s presence.

“The fact that he’s doing such a public deal means that’s how little he trusts them.”

He created this ordeal because he wanted to make the deal in front of everyone, but it is inevitable that he cowers when he has the card.

There is a saying that a guilty conscience needs no accuser.

“Do you think it’ll be possible to find him by knowing that his nationality is Swedish, he has blonde hair and blue eyes, and will be cowering?”

“There’s no reason to pick him out 100%. We’ll try anyone who seems suspicious.”

Even now, they are consistently picking out the people who seem to match the description to question them.

It is in vain. Each person they grab a hold of says that he is not Argos. There is a difference when people lie.

Unless they are actors, average people can tell that difference as well. Those who have gone through body modifications have the increased physical ability to notice the slight change in expression that occurs when someone lies.

“Blonde, blue eyes. Huh?”

[Team 1, catch a man trying to go through the road.]

Hell Sword subconsciously turned his head and discovered a man with blonde hair and blue eyes. He has his arms crossed with his body hunched forward, and is walking toward Black City. It is a very passive behavior.

Dark Side saw him as well and sent a party of 10 people to the man.

# Chapter 129

---

‘It’s okay. They won’t recognize me. How would they know who I am?’

Argos comforted himself as he walked to Black City.

Unless the PDA gets hacked, Lifers’ identities cannot be revealed. Even as this goes on, they are just normal Lifers to the subversives going after the card.

He wanted to do the deal in public for his safety, but he did not ask for protection, as he did not want to do anything unnecessary and become a target.

Argos usually uses a level E space compression bag. There is the danger that he could be robbed because the bag does not have owner recognition, but he had not really needed that until now.

However, as the card came out, his situation changed. Because he needed thorough security, he upgraded to the level D space compression bag. From level D, no one can open it unless they are the owner. The bag is expensive, but cannot be compared to the card’s worth.

His steps quicken. Argos was expressing his tension without intending to.

His judgment became cloudy because he has an item that he

cannot handle.

Beep beep!

He turned the PDA on and measured the distance to Black City. It is about 40km away.

‘I guess I’ll have to get in a car now.’

The day before the deal, Argos returned to reality from near here. He had come here already. He wanted to go further, but he cut it off midway.

It is not a distance that he can walk. He can rush there if he rides a car.

“Seller Argos.”

“What! Who?”

When Argos was about to hail a car, he heard someone call him from behind and reacted. He was trying to be careful, but the subconscious is really scary.

“So it is you.”

“What? No. I’m just someone looking around Black City! I was

just surprised because you appeared out of nowhere.”

“Swedish, blonde, blue eyes. And you’re still not Argos?”

“Good – goodness!”

How did they know that he is Swedish? He had not even told the world federation that. While Argos was taken aback, the murderers besieged him.

They thought they might be going back empty-handed again, but they had gotten it right. There are Lifers who react without meaning to if surprised from the back. They can realize the truth by really surprising someone through inductive interrogation, but the man in front of them is 100% Argos.

Look at how surprised he is.

“I can’t tell you if you’re smart or stupid.”

“Sav – save me!”

“Hurry out.”

“Yes!”

A murderer, who appeared to be the leader, covered Argos’

mouth with his hand. There was no way to fight him off because the attacker is wearing a battle suit.

“Are you wondering how we knew?”

Argos’ eyes are rolling back. He is frightened, but he wants to know.

“It’s impossible to hack PDAs. But, you went around saying your helper name too much.”

You are bound to get caught if your tail is long. Bus Lifers come into contact with countless Lifers because of the way that they fight. Since reward points are their aim, there are cases where a force will bring on more than 50 Lifers on a bus.

He did that for close to 2 years, so how many people has he met until now?

This would not have happened if he had sold the card with a deadline of several months, but it has just been 1 week since he picked it. There are bound to be as many problems as little preparation there is. Even the murderer understands that thought.

He must have been excited and nervous from getting an impressive item. He wanted to quickly take care of it and free himself.

“Though it is good for us.”

The murderers were about to drag Argos away when a few Lifers passing by saw him and started pointing. Something about the atmosphere is not good. Rumors spread within moments. If they delay, the world federation might send rankers.

[We're going back to headquarters.]

Dark Side is sending the signal. Blood Kingdom's headquarters are in the last zone Z. It is hundreds of kilometers away from where they are now in zone H.

The murderer frowns. Argos is flailing his arms and legs. Even a small fish is a bother if it flops. It is concerning even with a difference in physical ability.

He put up his hand. He is about to knock him out.

Woong!

[Warning! A reaction of energy detected from the sky!]

The murderer looks up after the battle suit's notice.

“Watch out!”

“Where to? Leave the person and go.”

Koharu came down and cut through one person, while Violet's javelin speared through another person. She settled and ruined a second person's face with a right hook.

Cha Jun Sung also went after the murderer with the time limit battle suit, but he activated the booster and avoided him. Instead, he lost Argos.

“Hercules! Take him towards Black City!”

“Mission confirmed!”

“Huh?”

Hercules turned the booster on and runs along the road. It is heavy but the space is open, so it went faster than 100km/h.

“Who are you guys!”

“I don't know, asshole.”

Papat!

Cha Jun Sung did not fight, and followed behind Hercules. His party members did the same. They will follow on their own. They do not have to stay in this place.

“Ugh! Get them!”

Tatatang!

When the murderers were about to chase them, bullets were shot at a few of them from the roof of a building. It was Park Jin Hyuk.

“Hi!”

Papat!

Park Jin Hyuk did not move with Cha Jun Sung, but moved separately from high places and took the duty of keeping the enemy in check. He means to divert their attention.

Bang!

They heard a thundering noise and stone fragments flew above their heads. Dark Side and Hell Sword read the situation and were running in the direction Cha Jun Sung's group was going in.

“Damn it. How did they know?”

“We'll think about that later.”

Dark Side raised the output of his battle suit's power. Blood

King's group will appear soon as well. If that happens, it is inevitable that the world federation will take notice. They need to catch these people before them.

[Black City, 40km to the rear on the left. There is an engagement between Blood Kingdom and regular Lifers.]

Strategist took action as soon as he heard the radio come in.

Zone H is currently dense with the world federation and all different kinds of large guilds. There must be something going on for Blood Kingdom to make a fuss while knowing that.

[Breaker, Wind Wing, War Hammer. It's close to where you guys are. You heard, right?] [We were on our way anyway.] [We'll join as well.]

Dual Blade and Sonic Boom, and Longinus spoke from behind.

[Take care of it.]

Strategist and the other rankers will protect this place. He wanted to send everyone if he could, but he needs to leave half of their power nearby just in case. Those 6 and the Lifers in the world federation should be able to take Blood Kingdom on. Even if they are pushed back, it will not be to the point where they cannot request support. He can dispatch additional force then.

"I can understand in the game. But why are those assholes like

that even in reality? Is it normal to kill people and take others' things?"

Nuclear spoke to himself as he looked in the direction of the fight. He could not for the life of him understand it. He calls them crazy, but they must be in their right minds as well.

"There's no end to it if you pick at it. They either really are crazy, or they just think it's a game."

"Geez."

"This all happened in the first place because of Life Mission and the helpers. If that hadn't happened, everyone would have gone on living their lives."

"That's true."

They themselves created the process and results, but the cause is Life Mission. Everyone is a victim.

"Where are you going?"

Nuclear calls out to him. He is a traditional noble. In past eras, people would not even have dared to look at him properly.

"I'm going to rest."

“If you’re bored, do you want to go wreak havoc on Blood Kingdom with me?”

“6 people went. If we go too, the empty spaces will be too big. We don’t want to be in unnecessary fights. If you really want to go, go with Chamma Sword.”

Chamma Sword felt a pang at Weapon Master’s words and smiled. His body is itching to go. He looks like he is about to bolt out at any second.

“I just said it for fun. We have to stay if Strategist tells us to.”

“Call when you need me.”

Weapon Master disappeared. Ice Queen and Boom Buster’s groups are fulfilling their duties and guarding their appointed areas. They cannot move freely.

Strategist does not give rankers commands. He just uses his intelligence and makes requests. It is an equivalent relationship. They do as he asks them to do because they know this.

They will watch for now. As a team, they are a force that cannot be pushed back if there are 6 of them.

# Chapter 130

---

Cha Jun Sung, Koharu, and Violet were busy blocking attacks flooding in from everywhere. Park Jin Hyuk covered them from above, but it was hard to expect much from that because dozens of people have gone to fight him as well.

Fortunately, they had kept running away as they fought, so they had not been surrounded. If they had gotten surrounded, they would have either been taken captive or killed before long.

Cha Jun Sung's group watched each other's backs. They each took on a different direction and made sure no one's backs were showing. No matter how many there are of the enemy, there is a limit to the number of people who can attack at the same time. They cannot use firearms or bombs as they normally do either. The only thing without restrictions are their vibrating weapons.

Bang bang bang bang!

The party members honestly do not know exactly what it is that Cha Jun Sung is trying to do. All they know is that on the day of the deal, they watched from a rooftop, saved a man being attacked, and they are now fighting with Blood Kingdom.

They are not sure if he meant to fight from the beginning, or if he just came to save the man while watching.

Even still, they did not ask questions and followed his lead because they trust him.

On the other hand, Violet found meaning in the chance to kill Blood Kingdom rather than her trust in Cha Jun Sung. She does not need a reason for a situation like this to arise. It is just important that there is a chance to clean these guys up.

The battle became more violent as more Blood Kingdom fighters swarm in. Cha Jun Sung's group started to use more power as well. It was not visible to the eye, but they were sweating profusely and their hands and feet were becoming tangled. A few attacks scratched their battle suits.

“Ack!”

“What – what is it!”

Lifers walking on the street are startled by the wave of battling coming towards them, and scatter in different directions. They felt like they would be torn up and killed if they got swept up in the fight.

[Battle core energy 32%. If you keep going like this, you will not last more than 4 more minutes.]

Odin warns him. It has been less than 10 minutes since the battle started, but he already used 68%. According to a simple calculation, 4 more minutes is the limit.

He fully activated the combat function in order to detect the

attacks coming from all directions, and strengthened the outer armor to 100% to withstand the external attacks. He would have distributed the energy to last a long time if they had been fighting one-on-one, but the consumption is severe because he has it on even while he is running away right now.

The energy of a basic form battle suit is premature. The total amount is small, and it is consumed quickly and it is slow. This makes the output of power weak. That is why they desperately need to upgrade to the next level.

[Jin Hyuk! Come down!]

Cha Jun Sung called for Park Jin Hyuk. He needs to join them now. Unless the world federation's contact network is down, they will meet midway.

Papat!

Park Jin Hyuk threw his body from a skyscraper. Right before he hit the ground, he used the booster to slow down and set down.

“What’s the plan!”

“Once the world federation joins, let’s join them and sweep these guys.”

They will not be cowards and run away after leaving their opponents to someone else. Imagine if that happened to you? How

angry would you be?

The world federation's power is much stronger than that of Blood Kingdom's. If they get help, it is likely that they can make Blood Kingdom collapse.

“I don't think it'll be that easy.”

A thin thread snaked out from the air and tried to wrap itself around Cha Jun Sung's body. He put his sword up and swiped at it with his strength.

It did fling out, but did not break. It was a level C weapon. The thin thread is made up of nanos of machinery.

“Death Fear.”

“Are you Overload? It's a pleasure.”

While attacks were coming in from everywhere, Violet pushed the enemy back and blocked the attacks with her javelin. At some point, the number of enemies reduced and four rankers approached Cha Jun Sung.

“Palbi Blood?”

“Oh! It's an honor. You recognize me.”

Palbi Blood is taunting him. Cha Jun Sung wanted to punch him in the face, but he held back.

‘We’re surrounded.’

In a short moment, in the time when they were trying to block Death Fear and Palbi Blood’s attack, they were surrounded by Blood Kingdom’s guild members. The rough estimate is that there are a couple hundred of them, but there must be thousands coming in from afar.

‘Four people in just the front.’

The direction they are looking in is the front, but the back is the direction that they are running away to. Rankers and people with battle suits are gathered in one area. If they get through the rear, they can still run away.

Cha Jun Sung nodded to his party members. They know what he is thinking just by looking into his eyes. As soon as he acts, they will align.

“It’s been a while.”

“Makung!”

“You....”

A path forms in the rear. It is not a path for Cha Jun Sung's group, but one for 2 people walking towards them.

Park Jin Hyuk grinds his teeth. Makung, who he lost to, is walking through the path. And he was with him.

“Campbell.”

“It’s not my real name, but since you’re calling me that.”

Blood King is chatty. They thought that it might not be his real name, and they were right.

‘The retreat is blocked too. What’s the world federation doing?’

Cha Jun Sung is thinking. Now, there are 6 of them. Run away? They cannot. They have gone beyond the limit of not just rankers, but also regular guild members.

Woong.

He reduced his battle suit’s energy to save it. It is a temporary measure. He needs to charge it if he wants to recover, but they will not allow for that.

“How did you know that we would raid here?”

“Do I have superpowers? It was a coincidence.”

“Is that right? Well, it doesn’t really matter.”

Hercules pointed a cannon at the approaching murderers. Those with battle suits laughed, but those without were scared and retreated to the back.

It has the power to go through steel. Even those who went through body modifications will die if hit.

“Is that Amhu and Empress of Light? Hi, kid. You grew a lot after body modifications.”

“Shut it, you asshole.”

Park Jin Hyuk threatened Blood King with a new gun he had bought, but there was no use. The flow was gone over. Cha Jun Sung’s group cannot overturn it with their strength.

“There’s no time, so let’s end it quickly.”

Wiing!

The 6 rankers including Blood King activated their battle suits. They are thinking of coming at them all together.

[You guys!]

It is not the radio. It is the sound of someone who has amplified his voice with a speaker.

Boom boom boom!

Rankers from the world federation climb a wall and are running at them. Under them, Lifers from the world federation are flooding in.

“We’re late. There’s nothing we can do about it. We’ll divide the power in half.”

Blood King gives out orders. One side will block Cha Jun Sung’s group and capture Argos, while the other blocks the world federation.

“It’s 1, 2, 6 people? Only four of us will go.”

They can tell who is who by the weapons they are coming with. Their goal is not to kill them. Their goal is to buy time. Four people are plenty to buy time.

Papapat!

Death Fear, Dark Side, Palbi Blood, and Makung lead the murderers to face the world federation. The world federation also

discovered the murderers and flooded in.

“Argos?”

Argos was terrified from seeing Blood King for the first time after only hearing about him. He could not understand why this was happening to him.

“Hell Sword, focus on dragging that guy away. I’ll block these people.”

“Great.”

“Go.”

Hell Sword flew to Hercules. Simultaneously, murderers attacked Cha Jun Sung’s group.

Papat!

While Cha Jun Sung, Violet, and Park Jin Hyuk fought the murderers, Koharu fell out and blocked Hell Sword’s path.

“Amhu!”

“Let’s go.”

The melee began.

# Chapter 131

---

Zone H area 1 turned into a battlefield. Thousands of Lifers tangle up in a fight. The points consumed reaches over the hundreds of thousands of points.

The world federation and Blood Kingdom's power are level. They would of course be able to sweep through this if all of the strategists in Black City join, but they kept getting caught going back and forth because they were cut in half.

If Cha Jun Sung's group had not blocked Blood King and Hell Sword from the center of the 2 groups, Blood Kingdom could have overpowered those under them.

They killed their enemies through any means possible even if it was cowardice and they were shielding themselves with their fellow members.

As people used to doing PKs, they were not picky about the means they used to extract results.

The fiercest place on the battlefield. Both sides' Lifers did not approach within the radius of 10 fighting rankers. Tacitly, each side's leader is trying to provide them with an appropriate environment.

“It’s fun! It’s fun!”

“Crazy asshole. You’re all crazy, but you’re the worst.”

War Hammer brought a hammer with a metal head as large as his body down on Palbi Blood. Due to the type of weapon it is, the hammer is slow though it has the highest power.

Bang bang!

Palbi Blood avoided it and a crater formed in the ground.

“Idiot.”

Ping ping ping!

8 daggers fly at War Hammer.

Bang!

From behind War Hammer, Sonic Boom rises up and blocks all of them with his legs that are covered with alloy boots.

Woong!

The daggers return to Palbi Blood as if they are alive. He is wearing gloves that make him one with the daggers.

There is a recognition device so they find the owner again even if

they go a far distance.

“This won’t do.”

Death Fear, Dark Side, and Makung are busy with 4 rankers as well. They just need to capture Argos, but the situation does not look good.

It is manageable now, but it becomes questionable once other rankers join in.

‘If it becomes dangerous, I’ll have to fall back.’

There is no such thing as camaraderie in Blood Kingdom. The Blood Kingdom rulers only joined forces because their plays are similar and that makes their active area overlap. They do not risk their lives for each other. That will be the same for everyone.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung and Blood King fling out in opposite directions. Distance was forcibly created through the repulsive force of the vibrating weapon and battle suit’s strength.

Cha Jun Sung thought of a way to get out while Blood King thought about how to get Argos.

‘Kill him.’

Blood King decided to kill Argos.

It is a messy situation. The enemy desperately blocks them and they have considerable strength. From one side, it looks like the members of Blood Kingdom are being pushed back by the number of rankers.

They need to have the room if they want to catch Argos, but they do not have that now.

‘We’ll use that.’

They bought it in advance in preparation for the last and worst case scenario. Half of these people die if it is set off in the middle of the city. It is one of the strongest level C weapons with its kill radius reaching hundreds of meters and one-off power.

Beep beep!

[We’re using it. Everyone get out once I send the signal.]

Blood King changes the radio channel. It is the one that Blood Kingdom’s top cadres and mid-level cadres with battle suits use.

It is fully secured, so other guild members cannot get into it.

[You’re going to use it? Crazy! Send the signal properly!] [Gulp!]

There was even the sound of mid-level cadres gulping. It is obvious who would be using it, and they will use waste a lot of points with that one hit.

[Are you going to kill everyone?] [I'm setting it to kill Argos, but it'll be good to reduce the world federation's power too..... It's good.]

Regular guild members? There are murderers everywhere. They can fill those numbers at any time.

They do not really want to use it, but it is the best method if they want to overturn the situation or complete the mission and retreat.

[I'm sure you're all listening?] [Ah, everything is ready. We'll lose a ton of points.] [We're going to gain a lot, too. We'll have to sacrifice to a certain point.] [Yeah. Call the location.]

Blood King called out the location. It is pretty far away and inconvenient to carry on the body. It is perfect to keep in one place to use.

[I input it. It will be fired in 5 minutes. Figure out how you're going to avoid it.]

The responses ended there. The cadres are calculating the time. They need to get away at least 1 minute before it goes off. If they do

not, there will be no distinction between enemies and allies, and they will all melt. The item is priced similarly to top level C weapons, and each missile goes for 5 million points.

The weapon that Blood King ordered to be fired is a white phosphorus shell. It is a compressed white phosphorus shell that is created through Life Mission's science. It is a deadly weapon that even melts the battle suit when hit.

The person firing it is Japan's Murayama Tanaka, the one helping in the shadows of Blood Kingdom. Cha Jun Sung and the world federation are focused on the battle without knowing this fact.

Beep beep!

Tyrant input the location coordinates. The white phosphorus shell will be dropped precisely in the center of where Cha Jun Sung's group is in the middle of battle. White phosphorus is also known as the white devil. With 1 hit of this, that area will be reduced to ruins.

Zing!

As the coordinates are saved, a vertical launch device calculated the distance and adjusted the direction. The missile(?) is as large as a car and weighs 2 tons.

Tyrant moved the vertical launch device without anyone's help.

This is not possible with body modifications. He is of course a battle suit owner.

There is something like a handle on the launch device so that one or more people can hold it.

“He he. They were having fun all on their own and they’re finally letting me cut in.”

Tyrant’s style is similar to that of Blood King’s, but he acts in the shadows for whatever reason.

He cannot expose himself and make a fuss like they can. If he does, there will be a lot of restrictions put on him in reality. There will be disadvantages, whether they are from the world federation or the Japanese government.

That is why he is leading a dual life. It is thrilling in its own right, but he has been complaining because he cannot get directly involved. He is finally able to fulfill that desire today.

Tyrant strokes the vertical launch device. It is an item that the rankers of Blood Kingdom bought just in case. They had hoped that they would not need to use it, but the situation has changed.

The guild said that they would help fill up the points that he loses from firing the white phosphorus shell, but it does not seem like they will need to do that.

Tyrant is personally the master of Anger, Japan's top guild. He basically bought all of the items he needs and he can accumulate a couple 10 million within a few months.

On top of that, there will be as many Lifers who die as there are points he loses from firing the shell, so he might even come out even. He will know for sure once it goes through.

Tyrant mounts the white phosphorus shell. It is almost as big as a person. It does not go off as soon as it is launched, but divides into hundreds of small bombs. Each of those bombs has 10 times the power of a grenade. It is like a missile.

It divides in the sky and as it falls to the ground, the primary explosion goes off with fragments flying.

The real part is next. The white devil billows white smoke, and the phosphorus component is here. If left at room temperature, it burns. The principle of it is similar to modern weaponry, but its force is entirely different. It is said to be the basic form, but it can melt through a battle suit. The best they can do is to not be hit with it.

“Koharu is there?”

Blood King's group does not know that Koharu is Amhu, but Tyrant knows.

It had been difficult to see her lately, but he did not know that

she had gone over to Overload. They often worked together in the virtual, and they are now completely stuck together.

“Bitch! I’ll cook you with Overload.”

If he cannot have her, he will crush her. That way, no one else can have her. ‘There’s no meaning if she’s not mine’.

He he!

[The white phosphorus shell will launch in 5 seconds.]

The countdown began. The numbers go down. When 1 became 0, what is known as the worst non-nuclear weapon in reality, penetrated the air.

\*\*\*

Bang!

Tyrant is dozens of kilometers away from the street in zone H. But it was delivered to the Lifers with a vibration that he could feel weakly.

“What’s that sound?”

Blood King and Cha Jun Sung look up. The battle suit’s enhanced

hearing catches a loud roar. There is no way to tell what it is. It is not something that can be detected by sound.

A gauntlet comes flying from the front. He quickly turns his head to the side and brings his left foot up. A curving high kick is about to hit Blood King's face, but the opponent's other hand blocks Cha Jun Sung's attack.

Cha Jun Sung is immobile while mid-kick, and Blood King body checks his chest. It is an iron force that he only saw in the game. Cha Jun Sung is pushed back by the force, and uses the booster on his back to steady himself.

“Tricky.”

Blood King is a fighter. He drags close encounters out over a long period of time. Cha Jun Sung is also confident in fighting from the kick boxing and kendo he learned, but he gets pushed back when the distance is so small. Everyone has a distance that is more of an advantage to them. Cha Jun Sung's is one where he can brandish his sword freely.

“What a pity.”

“A pity? What is?”

“I wanted to keep fighting, but the situation won't allow for it.”

Cha Jun Sung does not understand. Is he trying to run away? It

seems likely from the way he is slowly backing away.

[There are 2 minutes left. We're getting out.] [It'll become hell on earth.]

They can hear the shell slicing through the air with their battle suits.

Blood Kingdom's cadres know what it is, but the world federation and Cha Jun Sung's group do not, so they do not pay mind to it and continue to focus on fighting.

Papat.

“Huh? You assholes! Where are you going!”

“Don't chase him.”

War Hammer yells at Palbi Blood, who suddenly stopped fighting him and left. War Hammer stops Wind Wing from chasing him. It is not just Palbi Blood who is retreating. All of Blood Kingdom's cadres are leaving at the same time.

It could be a trap. They cannot act alone, and must identify the situation first.

“Why aren't the regular guild members leaving?”

“They could be cooking something up.”

War Hammer thought there might be something to what Wind Wing is saying and observes the situation, but the phenomenon unfolding before them is strange.

“They’re surprised?”

The guild members are taken off guard. They do not know what to do, as if they are children who have lost their mothers. The cadres left all at once and the command system collapsed.

As time passes, the phenomenon spreads like fire and swallows Blood Kingdom.

The world federation’s Lifers fight accordingly and the situation is reversed.

“I hope you come out alive.”

“I won’t lose you this time.”

In the two heart method, he raised the time limit to the highest vibration.

If the power is turned on, retention time is barely 5 minutes, but he cannot lose this opportunity. The battle suit’s energy is now under 10%.

“Look up.”

Cha Jun Sung stays aware of Blood King as he looks up at the sky. Something big that looks like a bullet is coming down like fireworks.

[Unidentified objects approaching. Scanning..... Scan complete! Lifer Cha Jun Sung! You need to get away immediately! That is a compressed white phosphorus shell!]

Cha Jun Sung's eyes tremble. He has never come into direct contact with a white phosphorus shell before, but he knows what it is. It is coming here now?

Papat!

Blood King laughs as he gets farther away from Cha Jun Sung. Cha Jun Sung needs to catch him, but there is now something more urgent.

# Chapter 132

---

[Everyone get out! Get as far away from here as you can! There's no time!]

Park Jin Hyuk, Koharu, and Violet heard Cha Jun Sung's urgency, did not ask questions, and retreated from the battlefield. Cha Jun Sung looked up at the sky again. It is right in front of them. It is quite far, but it will not take 30 seconds at that speed.

[Switch to voice mode, microphone setting!] [A white phosphorus shell is falling from the sky! Get away from here immediately!]

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung said that and left with Hercules and Argos.

He wants to explain further, but he would be swept up in it and killed if he did.

“What is he talking about?”

“White phosphorus shell? The sky?”

Was it because there was not enough of an explanation? Was it because the message was not properly relayed? The Lifers did not leave, and stared into the sky. The white devil embraced them.

Boom boom boom boom!

The shell arrived at its destination and divided into several hundreds. The pieces are as small as a person's fist, and scatter everywhere. White smoke comes out from the tails. It is the devil's descent.

Bang bang bang bang!

There was a giant explosion and smoke billowing into the area around the input location, going through buildings and onto the street. If the attack had been concentrated in a place dense with Lifers, those on the outskirts would not have been able to get away. But the explosion and smoke went across the entire defense and covered a radius. Every way out was completely blocked.

4th stage body modification Lifers are melting. Even an average white phosphorus would have been difficult to handle, but it is a compressed and enhanced weapon of mass destruction from the level C store.

More than 1000 people died from the 1st blast, and another similar set of numbers burned from the smoke.

War Hammer looks down at his stomach. A piece of the shell went into his stomach. It would have gone straight through if the battle suit had not been there, but the armor caused him even more pain.

He first felt the pain of his internal organs melting. Then as the shell exploded, blood, flesh, and smoke splattered out. How could War Hammer of the 36 rankers die so pitifully.

The situation is pandemonium. Regular Lifers were already annihilated and those who had barely hung on with their battle suits were dying off one by one.

Bang!

A 4 story building collapses. It had not been able to withstand the shock of 3 or 4 shells going off. Tyrant lost 15 million points because of this building, but the number of points coming in is much greater.

“Damn it!”

Ping ping ping!

Cha Jun Sung dodged a shell fragment and cursed. Stopping for a moment to warn the other Lifers has brought danger to him.

Park Jin Hyuk and the others escaped in time. They keep radioing in, but he does not have the mind to respond and they cannot come in.

The smoke has already spread throughout the area.

“Save – save me. Save me!”

A Lifer next to Cha Jun Sung is liquifying. A heat that is thousands of degrees high is sticking to his body, so the battle suit does not provide defense.

[Energy.... Under 4%! Lifer Cha Jun Sung! Charging is urgent.]

He moved busily as he stuck the charger in his battle suit. His energy consumption was severe, so the level did not fall but it did not fill up either.

He needs to get out, but he does not see a path. All he can see is smoke that is trying to eat him up.

Pew pew pew pew!

Hercules uses a cannon and booster to try to blow the smoke away, but it is not enough. It does not even buy them a moment of time.

The battle suit's hologram scans the field and draws out the terrain.

“How do I get out there?”

It is where there is the least smoke. It will soon be filled with white smoke as well. He needs to get out before then.

“Should I use this?”

Cha Jun Sung looked down at the ring on his finger. It is a protect ring. He had been saving it, but the time has come to use it.

[Not yet. I will pilot Hercules from now on.]

“What?”

Hercules left Argos with Cha Jun Sung, then ran toward the smoke. Battle suits cannot withstand it, so a metal armor definitely would not be able to. It melted within moments and stuck to the cyborg's body.

[Self-destruct activate.]

“Hey! What do you mean self-destruct!”

[The explosion from self-destruction will push the smoke for at least a short amount of time. I saved Hercules' system and sent it to the briefing room, so you can revive the system with points at any time. But it's all over if you die.]

It is true. He cannot die in a place like this.

A few Lifers tried to run away into the sky, but were gnawed away little by little by the smoke.

[Get down!]

Bang!

Hercules self-destructs. He has helped Cha Jun Sung a lot until now, so it is sad that he has died. He can revive him, but it is not a good feeling.

Fragments hit his body. He embraces Argos and protects him so that he does not get injured.

[Now! Use the protect ring and escape!]

“Deploy shield!”

A blue and purple magnetic field forms a strong veil. Cha Jun Sung holds Argos and runs. As the explosion shrinks, the smoke gets closer. It really is persistent.

Bang bang bang!

People use all types of firearms like fever shots and grenades to make a path through the smoke, but no one was able to succeed because they were not as strong as Cha Jun Sung's.

When the smoke touches the shield, it tries to get through in any way possible. If it goes through, Argos is 100% dead and Cha Jun

Sung is in danger.

The shield's color fades. Its output of power has been raised to 100%, but it is still eaten up by the white phosphorus shell.

"Ah!"

Cha Jun Sung expands the booster to full power. The energy he has left is 2%, but he would rather do everything he can if he is going to die anyway.

Cha Jun Sung escaped from a hell covered in white smoke. The shield broke at the same time.

The battle suit's energy became 0%. He quickly charged it.

"You don't think everyone inside there is going to die, are they?"

It is not just 1 or 2 people, but thousands. It goes beyond PK to a massacre.

Cha Jun Sung hears coughing in his arms, and quickly checks on Argos' state. A shell fragment is embedded near his heart. Blood flows from there but also from his mouth because his lungs have been affected too.

"No! Hurry to the briefing room!"

He needs to go to the briefing room himself. He cannot go if someone else sends him.

[It is too late. The lungs do not matter, but the fragment has gone into the heart. It cannot be regenerated.]

Odin had said before that anything can be cured as long as it is not irreparable.

“The card. What about the card?”

“System... recognition disabled.”

Argos' space compression bag has an owner recognition system on it, so it locks itself if he dies. It becomes garbage.

When an animal is reaching its death, it predicts that. People are the same. Argos does not want to believe it, but he knows that he will die soon.

“Sweden Stockholm..... Number 235-5..... Payment.”

He handed the space compression bag over to Cha Jun Sung and there is no way that he does not understand what this meant. In exchange for the card, he has asked that Cha Jun Sung help his family go on living.

“I understand.”

“Thank... you.”

Argos stopped breathing. There are 2 reasons why he chose Cha Jun Sung. He made an effort to save him until the end even though it was because of the card, and he is the only Lifer that he can see as he is dying.

“Did this happen because I got involved?”

Fated to die, it seems he could not have avoided death even if Cha Jun Sung had helped him. What is more serious is the massacre. There had been nothing about a white phosphorus shell in the notepad. He could not tell if he had forgotten to write it down or if Cha Jun Sung himself caused it, but it seems like the latter.

Tututu!

While Cha Jun Sung looked lost, world federation Lifers run over to him. There are a lot of faces he does not recognize, but there are a few he knows.

“Mr. Cha Jun Sung!”

Lim Si Hyuk and Han Chang Jin call his name. Cha Jun Sung takes the card from Argos' space compression bag and puts it in his own. He will deliver the remaining contents to Argos' family. He means to pay them the value of the card separately as well.

“What happened?”

“A white phosphorus shell went off.”

“White phosphorus shell!”

Han Chang Jin is appalled. As a soldier, he will know about it in more detail than others do.

“Fall back!”

# Chapter 133

---

The smoke just expanded inside and did not spread outside, but there is no good in going near it.

“The radio with Lifers who were engaged with Blood Kingdom was cut off.”

“Are you – are you saying that they all died? Does that make sense? There were 6 rankers in there!”

“Rankers are people too. They aren’t immortal.”

Nuclear raised his voice at his subordinates’ reports, and Chamma Sword calmed him down.

“Chamma Sword.....”

“Who are you? This is the first time I’m seeing you.”

His face is the same in reality and in the virtual. There are only 5 or 6 of the 36 rankers who did not virtually mold their faces, and Chamma Sword is one of them.

“Oh, I guess we’ve never met in reality. This is Korea’s Overload, who you were all very curious about.”

“Oh?”

“You’re Overload?”

The rankers’ reactions are split in half. They either do not care or are surprised.

Ice Queen and Boom Buster’s group know who he is because they have seen him, but Chamma Sword, Strategist, and Nuclear’s group were surprised because they did not know Cha Jun Sung from reality.

Weapon Master’s reaction stood out in particular.

“It’s been a while.”

“Ah, yes.”

Mechanic City is really an interesting place. It locks rankers up in 1 place and leads them to each other. He had not been able to see a single one before coming here, but he saw a majority of them today.

“I’m Strategist of the world federation. Can you give us a detailed explanation? It doesn’t seem possible to enter into that.”

Strategist looks at the white phosphorus smoke. It does not look as though it will go away anytime soon. They cannot do nothing, so they at least need to hear how this happened.

\*\*\*

Several hours passed until the smoke finally settled. Park Jin Hyuk's group ran out through the other direction, so they needed to circle around in order to meet. Cha Jun Sung explained what he saw and experienced to Strategist. The world federation had not been expecting Blood Kingdom to go so far, and many kept sighing heavily.

They have too much to consider, while the enemy is lawless. Just as it is much more difficult to prevent crimes than it is to commit them, it is the same context for the 2 groups.

“Murderers are throwing the real world away and crossing over into Mechanic City?”

“Yes. The real world is not a good place for them because there is law and order there. This place is paradise for them.”

Mechanic City is the best environment as it cuts off national interference. Blood King's group is good at using their heads.

“We are sweeping through them by mobilizing Lifers on a national dimension. We're getting a fair amount of results as well because we do not consider killing murderers as murder.”

But because they can move freely between reality, the mission, briefing rooms, and Mechanic City, it is not easy. If the murderers

completely take root here, there will be more disasters like that of today.

It is not a pleasant thought to do the same and stoop to their level.

He knows that it is a definite crime, so he cannot steal just because others are doing it. The world would have already perished if it was overrun with such people.

“How dreadful.”

Nuclear spoke as he looked at the road in ruins. It is another hell from that they have seen in the missions. A few buildings fell over completely and a few of the large buildings were ruined.

“The device launch itself is 5 million at the minimum. How crazy.”

“I guess 5 million is cheap for this kind of force.”

There will be no point if the battleshoot is upgraded, but anything below is nothing. It could be a genocidal weapon.

Strategist gives orders. Lifers turned on their biometric detectors to look for survivors. Rankers were gathered in one place. Blood Kingdom is bound to sweep through them if they appear.

“How many points do you think would have been taken off with this kind of chaos?”

“It’ll be in the hundreds of thousands.”

“Phew! They would have earned points while killing Lifers, so it might have covered what they lost.”

Glare Gun touches a hand cannon. He really does not know how to stop these guys. If it were up to him, he would put tracking devices on them. If they could know what they were going to do beforehand, they could at least block them. It is maddening that they bring on chaos out of nowhere.

“No vitals are reacting.”

“Damn it!”

There are several thousands of people. Does this mean that all of those people died? Even those who owned battlesuits?

“It’s strong enough to melt through battlesuits. No one can survive it with its level C standard, ranker or not.”

“I thought that dying is all the same, whether you die honorably or not. But this is too vain. They couldn’t even do anything.”

They died like dogs. Cha Jun Sung agrees. Putting value on

death? It might seem meaningless, but there are different meanings to different types of death.

Lifers who had scattered out come back with corpses. The best they can do is to check each person's identity and send them to their families.

Moreover, they make a distinction between those who have battlesuits. The number of personnel is in Strategist's PDA. He is referencing the PDA to find any missing persons.

“Breaker, Wind Wing, War Hammer, Sonic Boom.....”

4 corpses with special marks signify rankers. They barely found War Hammer among them. He has been reduced to pieces.

“What about Dual Blade and Longinus?”

“We weren't able to find them yet.”

“Do you think they're alive?”

“I don't know.”

A way to stay alive? It is not non existent. They can avoid the white phosphorus if they return to the real world or briefing room, or go into a mission. It is just a matter of whether they are able to move from a complex and dangerous situation.

[Strategist?] [Dual Blade! You survived?]

Was it telepathy? Dual Blade read Strategist's thoughts and radioed in.

[Longinus and I survived.]

Dual Blade and Longinus were pretty far from where the shell went off, so they returned to the briefing room as soon as they saw the white smoke come out.

A small 1% of Lifers in addition to them came out alive in similar ways. They have not returned to Mechanic City because there might still be smoke. They went back to the real world from the briefing room, asked the world federation Lifers what is happening, and entered again once they were sure that it is safe.

[Are you on the roadside?] [Yeah.] [Near.]

A few minutes passed. Dual Blade and Longinus appeared along with other Lifers. Everyone looked close to dead.

“Are we the last of the survivors?”

“Fuck!”

Nuclear rages. All lives are precious, but he is most saddened that

Sonic Boom died. They had become pretty close.

The more hurt he was, the more he wanted to tear Blood Kingdom apart.

“Zone Z is their area, right? Assholes. They think we’re not capable of setting off a white phosphorus shell?”

Nuclear is thinking of paying them back in double. Since they took a hit, he will give them 2.

“Calm down. They’ll be quiet for the time being after causing this.”

“Take that and calm down? Strategist, are you an angel? Are you out of your mind?”

Opinions are split. Those who say they need to get revenge and those who say they need to hold back. Cha Jun Sung feels for the situation.

‘It’s like the situation I saw when I was young between South and North Korea.’

The divided nation was united when Cha Jun Sung was in his mid-20s, but it was chaos before then. North Korea repeatedly provoked and threatened South Korea.

Even still, South Korea remained patient until the end. Why? It is war the second they respond to those provocations. It seemed weak to hold out but because of that, they only had 50 million discontented citizens instead of bringing them the pain of war. If they respond to the provocation of a guy running at them toward suicide, there is no end to the loss.

Strategist is angry and dejected too. He is smart, but it is not that he has a great personality. How could it be that he does not want to get revenge? But there is timing in revenge. They need to find the right moment. For those with similar powers, war would be a shortcut to self-destruction. They will advance before their enemy and run over them with overwhelming force. That is Strategist's plan.

"First, let's clear the battlefield. I'm going to open a conference right away, so make sure you all attend. Oh, Overload?"

"Yes?"

"I would like for you and your party members to attend as well. It won't be bad to hear, and isn't Blood Kingdom a common enemy anyway?"

"We'll do that."

Cha Jun Sung confirmed attendance. He feels guilt that this might have happened because of him. No matter what is brought up during the conference, it will not be bad to hear. His party members did not show aversion to the idea either. The situation is

serious.

# Chapter 134

---

11 rankers in the world federation and 5 people from Cha Jun Sung's group – there are exactly 16 people. Rankers are debating in a conference room in Black City.

The opposition to take a hit on Blood Kingdom or hold out. Cha Jun Sung did not interfere and just watched. He is not in a position to interfere and say something.

The strategists did not ask for his opinion either. They do not want to make it difficult by getting a 3rd party involved. The conference is leaning towards holding out.

It is impossible to get ahead of Strategist with words. Most of the people who want to attack, just want to get payback without logic.

They cannot think of a way to convince others because they are so angry. Strategist took control of the situation and calmed each of them down.

He explained why it is not the time in different ways so each of them could understand. As time passed, they gradually calmed down.

“Level B, level A if we go further. If we open them up before Blood Kingdom does, we'll be opening the store first as well. We're just pushing it back until then.”

With fully modified bodies and battlesuits, they can beat all of Mechanic City's Lifers even if they all come at the same time. The level of strength becomes different.

If they each have the strength to take on a level 8, they can knock buildings over like a breeze and kill level 6s. They will be able to do anything if they have the power.

"But the card went missing when Argos died. Opening level B. Fine. We can fill the force up with rankers and people with battlesuits."

An advance mission with 100 battlesuit Lifers? There will be sacrifices, but it is worth trying out. The problem is that Blood Kingdom is the same.

If they had the card, they would consider different cases and choose the optimal timing. If they do not? They cannot dominate the departure line.

Strategist is listening to the rankers' conversation, and looks at Cha Jun Sung. Cha Jun Sung is nervous and gulps. He can figure out why Strategist is looking at him like that.

"You got the card from Argos, didn't you?"

"Yes."

"Huh?"

Nuclear points to Cha Jun Sung in surprise. A few had the same reaction and a few looked on as though they had been expecting as much.

“..... I assume you have no intention of selling it.”

“I’m going to use it.”

Strategist left out the details of how Cha Jun Sung got the card and how he saved Argos from Blood Kingdom’s attack.

All that is important in the current situation is that Cha Jun Sung has the card.

It may be cruel, but the world federation cannot put much meaning in Argos’ life. Everything originated from the card in the first place.

“Overload. It’s originally an item that was promised in a deal with us.”

“What is he talking about?”

Boom Buster’s tone repels Park Jin Hyuk. It sounds like he is telling Cha Jun Sung to hand the card over. Nonsense! It was only promised, and there was no completed deal.

“What? Kid, get out of the picture.”

“Don’t attack me. I want to shoot a bullet through your head.”

Boom Buster glares at Park Jin Hyuk. Park Jin Hyuk ignores him.

“The world federation can’t claim it as ours.”

“So you’re saying we should hand it over?”

Chamma Sword stops him and Boom Buster raises his voice.

He is holding a grudge from falling to Cha Jun Sung in the past, and is glaring. Is he of the mindset that he cannot see others doing well?

“We’ll give you twice the amount of points we promised Argos. What do you think?”

“Sorry.”

He will not sell it for any amount of points. He can gather points at any time as long as he is alive, but the card is an item that is full of endless possibilities.

“Braybourne! Are you just going to watch? That was supposed to be yours!”

“Chamma Sword is right. We can’t claim ownership of it.”

Weapon Master abandoned regrets for the card with his arms crossed. Cha Jun Sung selling that? Unless he is crazy, he would not do it.

His abilities are at level with the rankers. He might actually be higher. He has the ability to bring out the card’s value. There is a saying, a pearl necklace on a pig’s neck. To apply it, if Cha Jun Sung is a king, the card is his crown.

“Ugh!”

Boom Buster storms out in frustration. It is not just that he does not like Cha Jun Sung, but everything including the whole situation with Blood Kingdom is getting to him. They are getting hit from everywhere and nothing is going as planned.

“He still has a terrible personality.”

“I don’t think that’s anything for you to say.”

Park Jin Hyuk eyed Violet and responded to her. Boom Buster is dirty, but Violet is rough around the edges.

“Overload. Do you want to try out a 1 million point mission?”

“We have gone to 900,000.”

Strategist nods. He had a rough expectation.

Overload, Amhu, Empress of Light. The 3 of them alone are enough of a force to go into a 900,000 point mission. With the support of sniper Park Jin Hyuk and medic Kyoko, there will not be too much trouble until 1 million.

“We have gone as far as 1.1 million. 15 rankers, 13 battlesuit owners. A full force with Lifers who have gone through the 4th stage of body modifications.”

Cha Jun Sung listened in silence. If someone is speaking, he needs to show that he is listening.

“28 Lifers with battlesuits were tied on to taking on levels 5 and 6. They really were incredible. I can’t even imagine 2 million.”

He has clearly shown that he will not sell the card. Strategist’s words have a different meaning.

“We were thinking of trying out level B missions in half a year. All of the members are battlesuit owners.”

4 rankers died. That is a big hit. Someone needs to fill up those spots. Why are rankers important? What is the difference between battlesuit rankers and battlesuit Lifers? A simple matter of know-how? No. That know-how is a benchmark of differentiating

between the two.

“When those 4 died, we lost their battlesuit modification methods.”

Basic battlesuits can be remodeled according to the Lifer’s style when upgrading. The modification method of Cha Jun Sung’s over booster is something that only he knows.

Even if an average Lifer opens up the level B store, they need to go through countless trial and error before they can remodel their battlesuits in their personal styles. Cha Jun Sung also wasted a tremendous amount of money while configuring the over booster in the virtual version.

The battlesuit is destroyed if they fail in the remodeling. He is not sure if it will work here as well, but he is pretty sure it will be the same. Several thousands of points will be wasted with 1 failure?

The modification methods converted the rankers’ value. Even if they are similar to average Lifers now, their potential ability is unmatched.

“According to my calculations, a full force of battlesuit owners and volume can cover for level C advancement. Though it is like a bee running into a wasp.”

Level B advancement? Thinking of taking on level 7 in pure volume is the same as a shortcut to massacre. That will be when

the rankers' true power is exercised.

“What is the point?”

“That card. Are you going to use it to open the level B store?”

“I am thinking about it.....”

If he is just thinking about his own group, he needs to use it to open level B. This is because there are only 5 of them. Battlesuit modifications are necessary for the 5 of them to advance.

‘Aha. I got it.’

Cha Jun Sung read Strategist's mind. He once thought of joining the world federation to make an attempt at an advancement mission. The 2 groups have the same goal.

There is no reason to reject them when they are offering to add strength. If they end up joining forces, they can get through C with volume. They would not need to use the card to open level B.

The Lifers had slowly taken steps into level C already, and the rankers have gone over 1 million. This kind of item shines brighter as it is kept for longer.

“Do you want to try to advance with us in 6 months? If you do that, you can use the card to open up level A. As long as you have

the points, you'll be able to gain the strength to fight level 8.”

“Help each other?”

“Even without the card..... The world federation has the strength to open level B. I'm not as confident about level A.”

Cha Jun Sung's group cannot open level B without the card. But if they receive help, they have the capacity to open level A. Strategist wants to arrange a give and take. The world federation will open level B for them, and they will help the federation open level A.

‘If we get to level A..... I'll be able to face that guy.’

Underpass.

The level 8 Blood Lord that brings mental collapse. Since it had just been born, it would have developed and reached near completion.

‘There's nothing to lose as a party.’

They will receive help once and give help once. Cha Jun Sung is of the personality where he usually does not want to do either, but that is different by circumstance.

It may be different if they have several lives, but they just have

one. If he wants to stay alive until Life Mission ends, it is right to use everything he can.

Cha Jun Sung looks at his party members. They will all have understood.

“I’m for it.”

“Of course we should if we keep efficiency in mind.”

No one rejects it. They are not so close minded that they are completely against working with others.

“Alright.”

Cha Jun Sung allows it. It is not an improvised decision. Even though the amount of time they had to think was short, this is the best option.

“Since you said it’s in 6 months, we can act on our own until then?”

“Yes. That doesn’t matter.”

They will not restrict their actions. They can just help out when they are contacted.

“But are you in contact with any other rankers? If they are preparing for the advance mission as well, it will be better to have more people.”

“What do you mean by other rankers?”

“People like Nine Tails, Light Shooter, Invisible, and Perforation Eye.”

“I can get in contact with a few of them. I was actually going to get in touch with them and ask if they wanted to help with the advancement mission.”

There are 14 rankers gathered here. They are all connected and know each other.

Though it may not be necessary in level C, they need to form relationships to increase their power with modified battlesuits.

“I’ll take it that you will not speak more about the card.”

“Yes.”

The conversation is over. The strategists spoke a little more, but there was nothing that Cha Jun Sung needed to pay attention to.

“Jun Sung, we lost that guy twice.”

“Who? Blood King?”

“He’ll get stronger from now on. If we knew this was going to happen, we should have done whatever it took to kill him in Field of Meat.”

“I agree.”

While the world federation rankers spoke among themselves, Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk talked about Blood King. If they had killed him at the time, if they had not saved him, this would not have happened.

“What are you talking about?”

Dual Blade approached Cha Jun Sung. He wants to get acquainted.

“Blood King. We’ve seen him twice. In the advance level E mission Field of Meat and today. But we lost him both times.”

Park Jin Hyuk poured out his complaints.

It was then. Weapon Master’s expression changed. He could hear with his enhanced sense of hearing with body modifications.

“Overload.”

“It’s the first time since PVP. It’s been a while.”

Cha Jun Sung greeted Weapon Master, who was suddenly standing next to him. He could remember when he came all the way from Europe to look for him.

“What did you just say?”

“About what?”

“Didn’t you say Field of Meat?”

“Oh! Right. But what about it?”

“Blood King was in that mission too?”

Cha Jun Sung got a weird feeling.

How should he describe it? It feels like he is being interrogated? He was annoyed with the unilateral question, but did not show it.

He thought that there must be a reason for it. Weapon Master has a cold personality, but he has a strong ego as nobility and courtesy is an innate characteristic.

“We weren’t in the same party, but he was trapped in there after failing to attack.”

There is something to it from the way he is asking. He explained everything in detail so that there would be no questions.

Weapon Master frowned because his immature brother and special forces had been attacked out of nowhere and killed by Blood King.

‘So it was him.’

Since his brother’s death, Weapon Master worked to find the culprit.

He had thought that it would be possible with his family’s power, but it had not been easy. It was so difficult that he would have to give up if the culprit did not admit to it.

But he finally found out the truth today. He knows what happened inside the mission. He did not think of it as a coincidence. This had been inevitable.

It is a divine order to kill the person who insulted the Venter family. He cannot do it immediately. He does not have enough power, and it is not a circumstance in which he could do so.

‘I will get revenge. Not for you, but for mother and the family.’

Weapon Master is not as fond of Carlyle as Isabel is. Though they

have the same blood, they might as well be strangers.

But that is not entirely the relationship. Carlyle is still his little brother. It would have been different if he had not been able to find the culprit but now that he has, he cannot leave Blood King alone.

Beep beep!

[That man is English.] [Yeah.]

Park Jin Hyuk watched Weapon Master's actions and texted Cha Jun Sung for confirmation. He suddenly experienced an unexplained feeling.

[Doesn't he look strangely similar to the yahoo we met in Field of Meat?]

Cha Jun Sung finally began to examine Weapon Master's face closely. He does look similar. They are both English and yahoos, and he seems to be a noble too.

Beep beep!

[Do you think that's his brother? Cousin?] [Let's ask Violet later. She'll know family relationships at least.]

It is someone else's matters, and something sensitive at that.

Unnecessary interest can ruin relationships. Violet will know what is going on.

‘He has sense.’

Weapon Master did not say it. He could tell that Park Jin Hyuk and Cha Jun Sung are doing something on their PDAs, but he pretended he did not see it.

They have manners. Regardless, he found the culprit thanks to them. He does not want to be seen as strange, so he needs to wrap it up well.

“It is something related to the family. Since you’ve solved something we’ve been stuck on, I’ll be repaying you shortly. I will be going first as I have something to do.”

Weapon Master left the conference room. It was a bit lukewarm. The rankers followed suit and started leaving one by one.

As the rankers were leaving, they each introduced themselves to Cha Jun Sung to get acquainted. Since he had seen quite a number of them in the virtual, it was not awkward.

The conference room becomes quiet. There is just Strategist left in the room.

“The world federation will handle the cumbersome issues. Overload, you can just go on with your daily life until the advance

mission.”

“You said that it’s in 6 months?”

“If there is any change, it would be sooner but not later than that.”

The rankers are ready to advance, but it will take some time to fill the force with battlesuit owners. If they are just filling up the force, it will only take 1 or 2 months.

But it is better to leave a lot of time for everything, so they need to arm hundreds to 1000 people. That way, they can fill the empty spaces of rankers. No one can tell if something like what happened today will happen again.

“So have you decided to leave Blood Kingdom alone?”

“I’m furious as well, but it’s premature. Even without us, they will not be able to act properly for the time being.”

The enemy saw a large amount of damage as well. The cadres all slipped out, but elite level C Lifers were killed. The biggest problem is separate.

“Blood King abandoned his allies. I don’t know how much camaraderie there is between murderers, but he will need time to calm them down after abandoning them like waste.”

The world federation and Blood Kingdom both unintentionally came to find time to take for themselves. And Cha Jun Sung took the card that made the 2 forces come to heads in the first place.

“I’ll be going as well now. The conference room will be empty, so you can rest before you leave.”

Strategist left the conference room as well. Cha Jun Sung’s group are the only ones left now.

“It feels like a storm has passed by.”

“It was a bit crazy.”

“Oh right. Violet. Weapon Master? Does he have a little brother?”

Park Jin Hyuk could not hold back his curiosity and asked.

“His youngest sibling is a little brother, but he died. It’s been about 2 years. A yahoo named Carlyle Venter. I think he went into a mission and never made it out.”

Park Jin Hyuk’s eyes widened and exchanged looks with Cha Jun Sung.

He is showing that he was right. Blood King has found a new

enemy.

“Is he an enemy anyway?”

Their forces are confronting each other, so there is no meaning in talking about personal grudges.

“Why?”

“We’ll explain on the way.”

Cha Jun Sung got up from his comfortable chair. They cannot stay here all day and they need to go back to zone A.

# Chapter 135

---

In order to fill the empty spots of rankers, the world federation requested to form alliances with rankers who act in parties like Cha Jun Sung or those who work alone.

They did not put forth any conditions that these rankers would be reluctant or averse to and just asked for them to help with a level C advance mission that they are currently in preparation for.

There were just 3 people. They could not figure out where the rest are or what they are doing. They could be gathered together, or they could have died. There is no saying that they might not have died like the 4 who died and had been found had. With Cha Jun Sung's group combined, they have 17 rankers.

After about 2 months, Strategist placed a large advertisement in mediums like the TV, computer, and radio as a last attempt to locate rankers. Anyone with eyes and ears could see these, and would allow the rankers to come find them on their own.

There were 36 rankers in total. Since 4 died, there are 32 left. 3 people promised to work with the world federation, so there are still 8 who are hidden. It would be good if they were all friendly but unfortunately, 3 are bad like Blood King's people.

As they have become rankers on skill and not character, there is no point in mistaking them as all heroes who had risen to the top.

The person that the world federation is looking for most is 5th

place ranker, Nine Tails. The battle suit modification methods of the rankers in 1st through 5th places are special. The reason why the like-level rankers were split into their own ranking is their battle suit modification and the strength of their weapon enhancement. The strength of their weapon enhancement virtually disappeared as the game moved into reality. This is now determined by their abilities to modify their battle suits and bodies.

That is why they need to get in contact with Nine Tails no matter what. Nine tails. Another name the person goes by was Nine Tailed Fox. 35 rankers have battle suits that are configured ultimately for one skill, but Nine Tails is a unique ranker who can destroy an enemy with 9 small abilities.

The interesting thing is that she did not get the name Nine Tailed Fox because of her fighting style. She is a nine tailed fox in every way.

\*\*\*

Stockholm, Sweden. It is the royal store for Panenaly Department Store's VIP.

Only people with money can come in, and a slender blonde woman is looking at the large screen TV inside with an interesting look.

[If you are watching this video, I ask that you call the world federation. We need your help for a level C advancement mission.]

The advertising video that the world federation made was translated into all languages and was broadcast all over the world. Once the subtitles come up, the names of the rankers they are looking for also appear.

Her arms are crossed and she uncrosses and crosses her legs. She moves elegantly. The blonde woman showed particular interest in one of the names that came up.

[Nine Tails.]

“Level C advancement..... I am at my limit. Should I give them a call?”

She created a 2-person party with a close friend. The 2 of them went around together until now, and they have never been stopped. They only get help from those around them when they need to advance.

Their 2-person party is passable until 200,000 to 300,000. The two gained confidence after acquiring battle suits, but mission difficulty levels raise with Lifers' power.

It is comfortable to work alone, but playing solo is difficult no matter how good someone is in Life Mission. The friend she made the party with has a similar personality to hers. They worked to get used to level C, but could not go up any further. They have too few people to do that. Not too long ago, they completed a mission and discussed recruiting more people.

“Madam, the items you ordered have arrived.”

“Is that right?”

A clerk at the royal store talks to her. The blonde woman brightens and goes to the items. The store is a comprehensive department store that carries everything that any woman would go crazy for like a bag, wallet, and shoes. Penanaly is a famous handbag brand. It is popular because of its simple design.

“Please wrap up everything I set to the side earlier, too.”

“Yes, madam!”

The employee’s voice is full of envy. The blonde woman comes to this store whenever she is bored, and she has never spent less than 1 million krona (\$36 million). She must spend 10 million krona on average every month.

Not even the rich can easily spend money like this. The employee looks at the blonde woman’s wrist. She has a PDA – what only those chosen to be Lifers can wear. Even level E Lifers who are stuck in level E missions earn \$20,000 to \$30,000 in a day. That is a year’s salary for a young person in today’s society. That is actually how much the employee’s salary is.

“Deliver this to my house by tonight.”

"Yes, of course. Thank you for visiting!"

The employee gathered her thoughts. The woman is from a different world. Someone that she herself cannot become.

Beep beep!

The blonde woman's PDA lights up. Someone is requesting a voice call.

[You're out?] [I almost died trying to get past 100,000 points. Ah! Did you see the advertisement from the world federation?] [I saw it. I was in reality.] [I thought about it carefully, and it's difficult for the 2 of us to get through this.]

Levels D and E were possible through separate parties or forces. But they cannot do that with level C. They will fall to it if they enter a 2 million point mission with people who float around. They need allies, even if they are not colleagues that they can trust and depend on.

[You're saying we should contact the world federation and seek cooperation?] [There's nothing to lose. We can't try out different strategies because it's not like we've got multiple like in the virtual version. With level C as a start, thinking about advancing through level A and B, we need to have a team.]

Is it just any ordinary team? It is a team made up of rankers. There are 15 rankers that the world federation has officially

announced. She heard that 4 died in Mechanic City recently, and it is a large number even without those 4.

[I'm sure there are other rankers who are reacting to the advertisement like we are. I'm sure there's actually a lot more.]

That is right. Including Cha Jun Sung's group, there are 17 rankers.

[Immediately?] [No. It'll be weird if we show up out of nowhere, no let's just leave a note saying that we'll join in 6 months.]

They have accumulated plenty of points by working through 200,000 to 300,000 point missions. They can hang out freely for now and put their hands out at the very end. If they need to, they can join a separate force and raise the difficulty. If there people willing to help them, they can cover the 2 of them.

[I'll see you in a couple days.] [Rest.]

The blonde woman leaves Panenaly Department Store.

“I’ll see you in 6 months, cute rankers.”

She winks at the large screen TV.

5th place ranking Nine Tails. Eurasia Delhi.

Just as the world federation had intended, Eurasia saw the advertisement video. Though there is no way for them to know that.

# Chapter 136

---

It has already been half a year since the opening of Mechanic City. What was once a ghost city is now a hot place for Lifers, where there is no interference from the world.

Nearly 2 years have passed since the 2nd round of Lifer selections, but there seem to be no signs of a 3rd round. Due to this, they are leveling.

2 years. There are no level E Lifers to be seen anywhere, and there are few level Ds. Whether through ability or bus, over 90% of Lifers have advanced to level C.

Mechanic City started with a population of 10,000 and has now reached 10 million. Even now, there is a spur of late comers.

There are over 100 million people from just the 1st and 2nd rounds of selection. Until now, the survival rate has been about 10%. Most died in advanced missions.

It is unknown how many people will die in the level C advancement, that even those with battle suits are scared of. What they do know is that buses are out of the question.

Only Cha Jun Sung knows this information, but contributions are added in starting with level C advancement missions.

It is a border that only those with the skills to can cross. No

matter how much they ride buses, they cannot advance if they do not have the contribution points that the helpers deem them.

The 3rd round of Lifer selections will open once the level C wall is broken. That will probably be the day with the rankers succeed in their attempts. There is 1 month left now.

---

Rankers gathered to the top floor of Black City 5 months after what Blood King did during the auction war.

The purpose of the meeting is to converge everyone's opinions and decide on the advance mission. Their lives are on the line. They cannot enter anywhere without a plan.

Level C Lifers have not been able to advance, so they are externally similar then and now regarding items. That is the same for Cha Jun Sung's group as well.

There needs to be something to buy. They have nothing left to buy in the level C store.

Rankers and Lifers who do well are preparing for the level B store. They are expecting each item to go for at least 1 million points. The mutants are level 7 starting in level B missions. They will need to fight against mutants that are nearly perfect.

‘There are few level B missions.’

If what is written in the notepad is right, there are less than 2000. It is because the population of level 7s has declined. The level

of difficulty raises as they go higher.

How many Lifers will need to be brought in to complete 1 level B mission? Thousands? Tens of thousands? It could be even get to more than hundreds of thousands.

Cha Jun Sung listens to the rankers who are in a heated debate.

There is no conflict of opinion. They are choosing between goals of annihilation and attainment by reading the description details carefully.

“We’ll make the goal annihilation.”

Strategist chose the goal. According to experience, annihilation takes more time than attainment does, but it is easier than missions of the same difficulty level.

It is not a big difference. It is very subtle, but that subtle difference can make all the difference between success and failure. Everyone agrees.

They do not have to think, and just kill all mutants they see in their active area. It is more comfortable in every aspect.

‘Should I make a suggestion?’

Before coming to the meeting, Cha Jun Sung had chosen a

mission he likes according to an extremely subjective criteria. Any how? Of course not. There is a reason for everything.

[Level C Advance Mission: Public Underground] [Goal: Annihilation] [Description: Since the birth of the king, the clan of blood suckers raised their momentum from the ground and went north to pay back the shame they felt in the past. It is just that there were hundreds of thousands of cocoons left unborn in the empty cohabitation. Thus, subjects who were not recognized by the king were left behind. It is a deep and humid place. End the life of the cruel and savage evil that is coiled at the bottom of the abyss.] [Reward: 2 million points. Lucky box.]

It is a linked mission to Underpass. There will be a tremendous difference in the level of difficulty, but it is an atmosphere and terrain that they are used to. The keywords to Public Underground are mutation and evolution.

Keywords exist in other advance missions, but what they have seen and faced is only Underpass and Public Underground. Could that be why his eyes went to this first?

‘If it’s the king, it must be the Blood Lord.’

He recalls his memory of when he fainted. He will not faint if he hears a level 8 now, but he will experience severe anemia.

Under the level 8 Blood Lord, there is the level 5 Blood Sucker. The difference is just 1 evolutionary step, but the gap is large. Blood Parasites are extremely fertile and fight with numbers.

If the king took the military north, the subjects left behind must be Blood Suckers. Mutation, evolution. They are Blood Suckers, but there is a high possibility that they surpassed the limit of level 5s and advanced to level 6.

He is not sure. But after piecing bits of information together, he can see a shadow. What Cha Jun Sung knows is invaluable.

‘I’ll suggest it.’

Among rankers who are of comparative reputation and ability, Cha Jun Sung cannot come out on top if they oppose him, but it is worth speaking up. Who knows? If he can convince them, they might choose Public Underground.

“Can I say something?”

“Overload? Do you have a different plan?”

“I looked over all of the missions and there was one that my eye kept going to.”

“What is it?”

“Public Underground.”

Beep beep!

The rankers search Public Underground on their PDAs. He was going to share it with them, but they moved before he could do it. They are diligent men and women.

“It’s a unique mission. King? Subjects? The king must be level 7 or 8.”

Lim Si Hyun read the mission description and offered a brief impression of it. He got the main point, so the other rankers just listened.

“Huh?”

Park Jin Hyuk reacts to Public Underground. Something is familiar.

“You get a feel for it?”

“Is this Underpass?”

“I don’t know either, but it seems like it from the feeling you get from it.”

“Overload. Can you explain it to us?”

Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk were discussing the mission between the 2 of them. There is no way for the rankers to understand what they are talking about.

“Oh. What happened is....”

Cha Jun Sung got Park Jin Hyuk’s permission to tell everyone about Underpass, how it is a repeat mission, what happened inside, and the types of mutants that live in it. When he was done explaining, Park Jin Hyuk added in a few words.

The rankers nodded in understanding. They cannot be 100% sure, but it all fits together perfectly. On top of that, the highlight was still to come.

“This guy wasn’t able to hear because he came back first, but I heard it. The roar of a level 8 Blood Lord that was just born. I passed out because of that.”

Fortunately, he had not been trapped in the mission because he passed out when the return was complete.

“Blood Lord!”

Glare Gun’s eyes widen. It is the level 8 mutant that he caught. Of the rankers, only he and Cha Jun Sung have caught the Blood Lord. In the virtual version, mutants beyond level 7 are not regenerated. It is over once they die. The ones that the 2 of them caught are different creatures in different habitats.

“The king is Blood Lord, the military is made up of Blood Parasites and Blood Devils, the army unit is Blood Suckers, the

cocoons left in the Underpass are arranged for defeat. The powerful servant must be a Blood Sucker.”

“Isn’t a Blood Sucker level 5?”

Nuclear asks in response to Strategist.

“Think flexibly. It’s level 5, but the description says that it’s a powerful subject. We need to think of it as a level 6. And it’s an advance mission. It’ll probably be the top of its level.”

‘Strategist indeed.’

Cha Jun Sung was innately surprised. Strategist interpreted what he said with the mission description, and unraveled it perfectly.

“Do you think it’s just one?”

“Of course not. We need to expect that there will be at least 5 or 6 Blood Suckers as its subjects. Blood Devils and Blood Parasites..... How horrible.”

2 million point annihilation. They need to be ready to face dozens of them. The number of people on his side is 100 with battle suits. Level 1 Blood Parasites and level 3 Blood Devils are nothing to worry about.

The number of people who will be tied up with battling the Blood

Suckers is important. Top of level 6 – they are an enemy that the strategists have not come across yet. It takes 10 rankers for even a lower class one. If it is top class and not mid or high, dozens of people will have to go up against one. They need to pay attention to the average Blood Suckers and the rest of the force needs to handle the rest of the subordinates on their own.

‘It’ll be a war.’

Cha Jun Sung could smell war from this mission. It feels like the blood suckers and Lifers would be putting everything on the line in this fight.

“If it’s hard to decide on a mission, I don’t think it’s a bad idea to go with the one that I suggested. This much information is better than going in somewhere without knowing anything.”

“If we complete this well, we might have an advantage while fighting the Blood Lord. We would be able to see the link in Underpass like you did, too.”

“Probably.”

Cha Jun Sung knows a little more information on the Blood Lord, but he did not voice them because they have nothing to do with level C. It is not on trend to go too far ahead.

“I don’t think Public Underground is bad. I’m not forcing it. Let’s go with the majority.”

Strategist wants to end these meetings today. It is better to spend less on making a decision. It could all amount to nothing if they just keep dragging it out.

“I’m for it.”

“I agree.”

The rankers are in 2 categories. Those who actively participate in the meeting and those who think, ‘If you make a decision, I’ll follow.’ Weapon Master, Chamma Sword, and Ice Queen belong to the latter.

“Um..... Please keep in mind that my judgement may not end up being right.”

Cha Jun Sung took a step back. These guys are coming over too quickly. He is certain to an extent, but he is slightly taken aback by the way they agree with him without thinking it over.

“It falls together too well like tetris for us to say that you’re wrong. First, we’ll have to look into the blood suckers. Things like their habits. Our chances of succeeding raise, the more that we know.”

With those words, Cha Jun Sung recalled the Blood Suckers he faced in the virtual version. They are large creatures. High level, the same level as the Caicus they faced in Closed Area.

“I’ll take it that it’s been decided.”

Strategist is trying to wrap up the meeting. He will let them know of details and any changes separately.

The rankers scatter as they had done the first time they gathered here. A few speak to Cha Jun Sung and his party members. They have not met often, but have gotten fairly used to each other because of their encounters in the virtual game and the few times they have met.

“Overload, can you stay behind for a moment? Including the other people in your party as well.”

Strategist calls to Cha Jun Sung.

The 3 new rankers added to the world federation have not gotten up from their chairs.

“I have something to discuss with the people who are not in the world federation.”

“Just to us?”

“No. 2 more people are going to come.”

“2 people?”

“The world federation Lifers have been together for a while now, so they are pretty cohesive. There could be friction or uncoordination during a mission.”

“You’re dividing us into factions.”

“The intent is a little different, but it’s basically the same.”

Strategist intends to have the rankers without organizations work together like the world federation rankers work together. With the 5 people in Cha Jun Sung’s group, the 3 new people, and the 2 who will be arriving soon, there will be 10 and a balance is forming.

“I’ll explain in more detail once everyone is here.”

Everyone waited with patience. It would be soon.

---

“Damn it. This woman has no sense of time or punctuality.”

In a cafe near Black City, a sturdy man is complaining as a cyborg serves him coffee. He is waiting for someone.

They had promised to meet at 3, but she is already 20 minutes late. It is an important meeting. They should have gotten there early, but she is late! She is always late.

Knock knock.

The man turned his head to the sound of knocking on the glass. The woman he had been waiting for was waving to him without a care for her being late.

“You’re in full setting. To someone who doesn’t know better, you look like you’re going on a blind date.”

The man stood up and went outside. And at the moment he was about to say something,

“Ho ho! Don’t nag at me.”

“Uh..... Are you joking? Did you forget who we’re going to meet? Why do you look like that?”

Nine Tails is wearing a dress that is tight on her body. She spins around once to show off her body. She is attractive, but the man just looks annoyed.

“You’re going to go looking like that when there are all of those rankers there? That’s why you got that nickname Nine Tailed Fox.”

“I like it. The Nine Tailed Fox is a spirit in Asian stories.”

“What spirit. It’s a monster that eats people’s livers. It’s a demon

in the west, a monster.”

“Shut up and let’s go.”

Nine Tails covered her eyes, said what she wanted to, and walked toward Black City.

“How could I have gotten close to that person?”

The man pulls at his hair. Mechanic City is a lawless zone for Lifers. With the number of people with the 4th stage of body modifications and battle suits increasing exponentially, they can be taken over if attacked out of nowhere.

Even still, Nine Tails dresses casually unless there are special circumstances.

“Stop looking, huh?”

“Ahem ahem!”

The men staring at Nine Tails’ face and body are embarrassed and cough awkwardly.

They did not get into a fight. Black City is the world federation’s zone. It is the worst environment for a bad Lifer to act out in.

There is also a patrol that goes on watch frequently, so they can be disadvantaged if they act out.

“You’re not coming?”

“I’m going, I’m going.”

The man dropped his shoulders and followed behind Nine Tails. He loses all energy when he spends an entire day with that woman. She is wicked and knows how to play around with men.

# Chapter 137

---

The rankers inside the conference room stare at Nine Tails. Because she is pretty? In looks, Koharu, Kyoko, and Violet do not fall behind either. They are staring in wonderment.

“It’s a pleasure to meet you. I’m Nine Tails, Eurasia! This is my partner, Alfonso Spen! He’s Swiss and his nickname is Light Shooter.”

“Why are you introducing me? You’re driving me nuts. It’s a pleasure to meet you. I’m Alfonso.”

They bicker endlessly. They were always together in the virtual game, and have been together in reality as well. Rankers really have been in contact with each other.

[She’s a very unique woman.]

[She is unique.....]

Nine Tails is free. She is not free because she likes to do solo missions and plays. Her personality itself is liberal.

She is a very open woman. Excluding Violet’s aggressive nature, they have a lot of similarities. They can tell what kind of person she is just from the way she comes here without a battle suit as though she is taking a walk in her neighborhood park.

[He's Light Shooter?]

[Yeah. He's the only sniper of the 36 rankers. He'll be a lot of help if you get on friendly terms with him.]

Everyone wants to become the best. Park Jin Hyuk is the same. If he wants to become the best sniper, he needs to beat Light Shooter in Life Mission.

“Strategist, you’re the only ranker in the world federation. Who is everyone else?”

Nine Tails smiles brightly and looks at Cha Jun Sung’s group and the new people. The way she looks at them is not rough.

“As you said, I’m the only person here who is in the world federation. This is a separate meeting for just the Lifers who are not in an organization.”

Strategist introduced each person in turn. It is right that each person introduce themselves, but it is better for him to do it so that they can move along quickly.

Nine Tails’ eyes brighten. Light Shooter looks on with interest as well. There are people they ran into in the virtual version, but they have a few relationships with others like Cha Jun Sung and do not know a lot of other rankers.

“Wow! Overload, I always wanted to meet you.”

Light Shooter spoke in a friendly manner. Most of the 36 rankers are equal, but Cha Jun Sung is the only person who succeeded in a level 9 raid.

It can be said that he has more experience than others in Life Mission. It is evident that people will jump through hoops to try to get into his party when he takes on the Evil Queen raid in the distant future.

“Lastly, this is Ms. Violet, who is called the Empress of Light.”

Violet was introduced last because her seat is the farthest.

Nine Tails had already guessed who Violet is because they were all showing their faces. She has not changed her appearance. Her face is the same in the virtual and in reality. There is no way she could not tell who she is.

“You’re the same.”

“I’ll take that as a compliment.”

They are familiar with each other because they were both active in Europe, but they do not have a friendly relationship. They never had a big fight, but they could be compared to water and oil.

They are strangely awkward. Nine Tails has the personality

where she tries to get over things without much thought. Even today, she was late. She did apologize, but it was natural in passing.

“I’ll be short. I had all of you gather here so we could separate into teams.”

“Teams?”

“The world federation rankers have grown accustomed to working together over time. It does not look like it, but there is a strong cohesion. If we mix them in with you in this mission, there may be things that don’t fit.”

Strategist will make adjustments in the middle, but close rankers will have each others’ backs.

“A force has 10 parties. We’ll have 100 people. There are 10 people gathered here now – it’s 1 party.”

“Aha!”

“I see.”

The rankers reacted in understanding. Cooperation among forces? It is important.

If a party is lacking in collaboration, however, having a force

spread wide does not matter. Even when constructing a building, the bricks are not laid first. A foundation is laid down and pillars are stood up.

“90 people are in the world federation, meaning they have already formed an alliance. Exactly 10 people are independent. You need to help each other.”

It is too difficult to try to mix in with the Lifers within a short period of time. Putting people who do not know each other together to get them on friendly terms is a time saver.

Strategist continued to talk. There are things that he already said and new things.

Most of what he had already said was regarding the description of Public Underground. Nine Tails and Light Shooter needed to get familiarized with it.

“So for the remaining month, what do you think of creating a party and going into missions to form teamwork?”

These 10 people would not be able to complete a 1 million point mission even if they combined their strengths, but the purpose of it is not to try out high levels of difficulty on their own.

Strategist's intent is for them to become familiar with each other before going into Public Underground.

“It doesn’t matter for us.”

“That’s the same for us.”

Cha Jun Sung’s group and 3 rankers spoke up. They would have thought about it if it was a continuing party, but it is a temporary party for advancement. They are willing to sacrifice a bit in order to succeed.

Light Shooter takes a glance at Nine Tails. He is secretly agreeing as well. The problem is what Nine Tails will do.

“I’m against it. I have the kind of personality where I don’t get along with strangers.”

“But don’t you think it’s a good idea to try out working together since it’s something where our lives are on the line?”

Strategist interfered to convince her. He had thought that everyone would agree to it. He had not guessed that anyone would reject it.

“I’m sorry. Instead, I’ll follow whatever you tell me to do in the mission well. I’ll work for the group rather than for myself.”

Nine Tails looks at Cha Jun Sung. She noticed that everyone including the Strategist looks at Cha Jun Sung when they say something about the party. She is looking at him because she has realized that he is the tacit party leader.

“Alright.”

“Thank you for understanding!”

Strategist retreated. Pressuring someone to do what they do not want to can cause averse reactions. Light Shooter’s expression shows that his thoughts are different from that of Nine Tails, but they will not separate as long as they are a team.

After this, they did not discuss much and spent the rest of the time creating amity. Lifers always begin to bristle when it is time for them to advance.

Advancing is a type of judgement. If they fail, they die – it is a judgement where their lives are on the line. 1 month is what you make of it, but it is not a short amount of time.

It is a fair amount of time where they can do whatever they put their minds to. But as said previously, it is what you make of it. Time flew by like a bullet as they were anxious about the advancement.

---

100 Lifers are waiting for the entry time as they check their equipment.

Their expressions show their anxiety. They are fully armed, and everyone has a battle suit. 19 rankers have come together to complete Public Underground.

Honestly, the boundary between regular Lifers and rankers is ambiguous until they remodel their battle suits.

This is because their gear is similar. Even if Cha Jun Sung uses his battle suit, he cannot take on 2. He desperately needs to upgrade. He must advance.

Lifers who have gone fairly high even if they are not rankers, have their own methods of modeling their battle suits. Remodeling is achieved by combinations. They apply various parts and abilities to the battle suit.

Up to 10 combinations are possible, and Cha Jun Sung's battle suit has 10 while the other of the 36 rankers have 9. He will need to wait and see if he will be able to go through with all 3 in the reality version as well.

“Is everyone ready?”

“Yes!”

Strategist yells from the center of the Lifers. Everyone responds with power. There is a slight tremor in their voices. It is not good to be too nervous, but appropriate anxiety gives people the strength to make it out of unexpected situations.

It means that they are ready for anything to come out at them at anytime from anywhere.

“Please stand with your parties. We will enter in 5 minutes.”

Strategist commands the force. There is a 10 person party of world federation rankers that the Strategist is in, and the party of Cha Jun Sung’s ground and the 5 additional rankers. These are the 2 ranker parties. The rest of the members like medics and snipers are occupation Lifers.

Papat!

The Lifers move in coordination. Since they are the world federation, there is less individual behavior and they focused on the group. It is like watching well-trained soldiers.

“We will enter.”

Beep beep!

Strategist applies for admission on behalf of everyone. They hear a notice and confirmation of group entry comes up on the Lifers’ PDAs. They press ‘yes’ and everything in front of them disappears.

“Let’s do well, party leader!”

“Let’s all come back safely.”

Nine Tails speaks affectionately as they enter. The rankers wished for safe returns before they entered. With that, the Lifers

next to Cha Jun Sung also disappear into the mission.

‘Let’s go.’

Cha Jun Sung also accepted entry. The scenery he is looking at is Mechanic City. When he closes and opens his eyes again, it will be Public Underground where they will need to fight fiercely for their lives.

# Chapter 138

---

“10 people?”

“Where did everyone go?”

The first scenery the Cha Jun Sung sees is similar to the bunker that Park Jin Hyuk brought him to a long time ago.

The way out is so small that a person would need to crawl out, and the inside is a flat square that cannot be more than 350 square feet. He is taken aback because 100 people entered, but he is only looking at his party of 10.

[There isn't a secure area for 100 people to enter at the same time, so we have summoned you as parties in groups of 10 to bunkers. Each party is 2 to 3 km apart, and your PDAs are linked so that you can check each other's locations.]

Odin's voice comes through the battle suit. Rather than Odin speaking, it is a group announcement. Each of the Lifers' helpers relayed the same message verbatim.

“So this means that the party closest to us is 2km away?”

“I guess so.”

The additional rankers Puppet and Black Leopard are going

through the situation. Invisible stayed back. He has a quiet personality. He is too quiet. He has not said more than 20 words in the month that they have worked together. Nine Tails found something interesting and has a wide smile. Light Shooter is busy looking around.

“Seems like that’s the only way out.”

Park Jin Hyuk bends down and opens the bunker entrance. The sensors on his battle suit do not detect mutants.

“Shall we go out?”

“No. We have to wait until they radio in.”

It is a group effort. They cannot act on their own will. If the force is in the same situation, Strategist, the force leader, will lay out the commands.

[I’m sure you all heard the helpers’ notice?]

[Yes.]

[We can’t see the terrain on the PDA, but each party’s location is roughly indicated with a dot. Rather than forcing everyone to meet up, it would be better to have each party search the areas they are in individually and join the parties that are closest to them.]

He wants them to go from 10 groups to 5, 5 to 3, and then to 1.

The goal of Public Underground is annihilation. They cannot leave a single being alive. It is dangerous, but it is better to have separate groups in order to search a wide area.

One party is made up of 10 battle suit owners. They can take on 3 or 4 level 5s even if they are top level. It seems there will not be much trouble as long as they do not run into level 6s.

“I’ll go out first.”

Cha Jun Sung hunched down and left the bunker. The party members followed him out in a line. They barely crawled out due to the size of their battle suits. It is not a space where more than 1 person can squeeze out at a time.

“It’s the Underpass.”

As soon as Park Jin Hyuk came out, he saw the outside foreground and realized that it is the Underpass he had gone in and out of regularly before. It is a little different, but there are a lot of things that overlap.

“You know where we are?”

“It’s not close to where I used to work. That’s worth 500 points, so it can’t be compared to 2 million. It feels like dozens of Blood Suckers could come bursting out at anytime.”

A musty smell tingles their noses. It smells rotten and fishy. The ground is flat but there is a large crater in the middle where strange dregs float on top of water. The ceiling is semi-circular, and is without a doubt a groundwater well.

Beep beep!

A red dot blinks on Cha Jun Sung's PDA. A party nearby is approaching to join them. They are slow. There is the inclination to be prepared for attacks from Blood Suckers and the path is not a straight path, but is more complicated like a maze.

“Let’s go in the direction that they’re coming in.”

The directions they can go are forward and backwards. The party is coming from behind them. They will create more distance if they go forward, so they need to go backwards and get closer.

“As expected, let’s take turns doing a field scan. We can quickly recharge the battle suit because we have a rapid charging device, but we should save it.”

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung turned his field scan on. 10 people are bunched together. The effect is increased if they are far apart and is a waste of energy when they are together.

A radius of hundreds of meters is scanned in front of the battle suit hologram. The terrain is extremely complex. It is just the one path they see in front of them right now, but if they go in a little deeper, it forks out in dozens of different directions. Lifers without battle suits would not be able to find the path and get lost.

“Jun Sung, it isn’t narrowing.”

“I guess it’s because of the maze.”

2 to 3km is not a large distance. It is close enough to be a 40 minute walking distance at most. However, 20 minutes has passed and they have not gotten through a fourth of the way. The trip is taking longer than they thought it would because they are going back and forth in a twisted path.

They do not rush. Not even an hour has passed since they entered the mission. They do not know how long they will have to stay in here, so they will not last long if they start to become impatient already.

[What’s wrong with this path?]

[It feels like we’re looking for hidden pictures even though we’re walking with the field scan.]

The Lifers send messages over the radio. They are all experiencing the complexity of the path.

Cha Jun Sung halts.

“What is it?”

“Stay here.”

Cha Jun Sung leaves his party and walks forward alone. His heat sensor picked up something gathered to one place. He cannot tell how many of them there are because they are at the end of the field scan, but more are being picked up the closer he goes.

He gestures with a finger behind him to tell them to come. Using body language instead of talking means that there are mutants up ahead.

[Turn on your field scan.]

Woong!

The 9 party members turned their field scans on. Red and yellow marks are dotted in the scope. There are hundreds of them.

[It seems like this is the Blood Devil's nest. I told you before, right?]

When Park Jin Hyuk first entered Underpass, his party threw a photothermal bomb into a hole because they heard strange sounds. A level 3 Blood Devil jumped out and killed the entire party. The

numbers and appearance of it is exactly that.

[Party 4 is going into battle.]

[Party 7 is going into battle.]

When Cha Jun Sung's group discovered the Blood Suckers, other parties entered into battle. If the mutants are spread out throughout Underpass, they cannot avoid battling either.

[Party 10 is going as well.]

Cha Jun Sung is the head of party 10. He cannot just pass by it. They need to kill every last one of them because it is an annihilation mission.

“Let’s go lightly since we’re in the first half.”

Woong!

Their sight is brightened. Night vision lets him see the dark underpass as though it is in broad daylight, and the heat detector and infrared sensor scan over the topography.

“I see the hole over there.”

If they use the battle suit, the sound of footsteps is reduced and

their smells are hidden. Blood Parasites' senses are degenerated. They can only smell. Due to that, the enemy did not approach them.

Cha Jun Sung goes into the hole. He does not hesitate. The same goes for his party members.

Cool air raises the hair on their skin. The Blood Parasites that had been asleep inside, scream. This is an attack out of the blue.

The party slaughtered them easily. They are just level 1. They are helpless against battle suits that can take on level 5s.

Kyah!

They heard a sharp sound while they were killing for a while. The Blood Parasites had pinpointed the location of Cha Jun Sung's party exactly, and are all swarming in at the same time. They do not even leave a scratch.

They cut through the ones that bite with their vibrating weapons. They even ripped the parasites apart with their bare hands at times.

Park Jin Hyuk repeatedly hunted from the end of the party and quickly retreated to the back. A tail that has thorns longer than a human finger all over it, passes by him.

“It’s here. The Blood Demon.”

Kyak!

It is clearly visible even though it is dark. It is 10m tall, with thick skin, and thorns everywhere like a hedgehog. It is so hideous that it is impossible to find a similar creature to its face. It is as strange as an alien in a movie.

Its only characteristic is that it looks like a centipede with blades sticking out on either side of its body like hooks. A long time ago, it was so scary that he almost passed out.

There is 1 Blood Demon. It examines Park Jin Hyuk and circles him. He is so bored that he yawns.

“Hurry up.”

Kyak!

It is swift. It wraps around Park Jin Hyuk within seconds. If he had been a normal human being, his entire body would have been punctured with holes.

The Blood Demon squeezes him as a snake would its prey, and its thorns scratch his battle suit, applying pressure.

“What are you doing. Let’s move.”

“Yes.”

Park Jin Hyuk flexed his arm out. The Blood Demon’s body cannot beat that strength and rips. As a mutant, it is still alive even though its body is ripped.

“It’s weak.”

“It’s proof that we’ve advanced.”

If Cha Jun Sung and Park Jin Hyuk had come across the Blood Demon when they first met, they would not have made it this far. They would have died on the spot.

“I think we could take on a couple hundred.”

“If the results are reversed even if the process is easy, the mission is going to the hills. Don’t let your guard down until the end.”

They need to catch the boss of Public Underground. There is no point in killing all of the subordinates if they cannot get the big one.

The battle was bland. They came back out of the hole before 5 minutes had passed. It seems there were about 300 mutants, but the 10 of them had not even warmed up.

“Is level 6 that strong?”

“If we measure the strength with the force as a standard, it’s extremely strong.”

The 3 top level Caicuses that ravaged Cha Jun Sung in the training room could take on 1 low level 6.

The deviation of strength following level is severe, but lowest and low levels have fairly large effects. But this is the highest of its level. If the difference is unimaginable, think about the difference between a low level 5 and top level 5.

“When thinking in terms of the virtual version, the basic type battle suit’s limit is low or mid level for this group.

Koharu helps Cha Jun Sung with his explanation. It is a party with 8 rankers. When their knowledge is put together, there is more than they know than they do not.

“So the key is for there not to be several level 5 or 6s.”

“Level 6 to be more precise.”

With the force members’ abilities, they can take on mid level 5s one-on-one. Top level would be two-to-one or three-to-one. Level 6? They will need at least 6 or 7 people. If they are beyond mid level, they will probably need 10 or 20 people to take them. If even 5 of them come out, half of the force’s strength will have to be focused on level 6s. It would be a tight face off because there will

be a lot of level 3 and 4s as well.

“Let’s do our best. If we can’t do it even after giving it our best, it was an impossible mission in the first place.”

“There’s no such thing as impossible for us!”

Cha Jun Sung heard Park Jin Hyuk behind him and strut along their path again. He hoped Park Jin Hyuk was right, that nothing is impossible for them.

# Chapter 139

---

[Party 3, joined party 6.]

[Party 5, joined party 9.]

The parties that were summoned to different locations started to meet up. Cha Jun Sung's group also finally met up with party 4 after 3 hours. In that time, they swept through 3 Blood Demon habitats. The frequency at which the 10 parties found habitats were 2 or 3, with 4 at the most.

Less than sacrifices, there are no people with injuries. Level 3s cannot create much damage to the battlesuit. It takes a level 4 to make them feel like they have taken a hit.

[Parties 1, 2, 7, parties 3, 6, 8, parties 4, 10, parties 5, 9. We've been divided into 4. There isn't a particular threat, so let's gather together slowly.]

Everything beyond level 5 must be in what is called the Public Underground.

A warden and defensive force will be necessary to guard hundreds of thousands of cocoons. They have an ominous foreboding that all of the difficulty will be saved for last. If that is right, this right now is the calm before the storm. What the force can do is to kill as many Blood Parasites as they can.

Droplets from the ceiling fall into rotten waters. A few Lifers subconsciously follow the sound. They only looked at it because they heard it. 10 parties combined into 4. Even now, the parties that are close to each other are moving towards each other. They also found paths into the Underground.

Woong!

One of the battlesuit's basic functions is to use a field scan, electromagnetic waves, and echolocation to project the surroundings' features as a hologram. The farther they go into the Underground, the less effect the field scan has. It either does not function fully because it is so far below the ground or because the walls are so thick.

They need to limit the radius to within 30m if they want to be able to see clearly. If they spread out and each person turns on the field scan to link them, the situation becomes much better but it is not a wise choice. They need to be together in order to prevent attacks.

They do not think that they can complete the mission without any sacrifices. However, they need to maintain a full force until they come face to face with the head of the Public Underground. If dying is inevitable, it is better to go there and die while helping the others.

A level C Lifer with a battlesuit is powerful, but the situation changes if the mutant attacking is a level 5 or 6. They are just 100 people. It may feel like a lot, but it is a small enough number that it can reach 0 quickly if people die off one by one.

Time keeps passing. There are no attacks. This makes Cha Jun Sung even more nervous. Where are they all hidden that they do not appear?

[Parties 1 and 2 joined parties 3, 6, 8.]

Party 1 is made of rankers and party 2 includes Strategist. Parties 1 and 10 have the greatest power in the force. Ultimately, 6 parties have met up on that side. 60% of the force has gathered, so they can get through most threats easily.

“Why aren’t we getting any closer to parties 5 and 9?”

“Could it be that they’re lost in one place?”

Cha Jun Sung looks at the signal that parties 5 and 9 give off, and reads the distance. They are about 1.2km away. It is fairly close, but they are not getting any nearer to each other. The radio is quiet as well. It does not seem like anything major happened to them.

[Party 5, your movement is slow. Is something happening?]

Cha Jun Sung radios in. They themselves are moving, so they will meet up even if party 5 does not move, but they need to know if there is a reason for it.

[We are at a wall.]

[Wall?]

[We followed a field scan and signals from parties 4 and 10, but all we see is a wall.]

It seems they went into the wrong path. It is a path that they spent hours to get through. If they want to go back to find a new path, it could take a full day. Instead, they are standing in place without being able to do anything.

“We’ll go.”

“Alright.”

Cha Jun Sung’s group is finding their way well. They could end up at a dead end like parties 5 and 9, but they have not been stopped yet.

[Wait where you are. We will go from here.]

[Confirmed.]

Since they are getting closer, they will do what they can. If they need to go back, they will make that call when they need to.

---

20 Lifers move in the direction that the water is flowing, with 1 party waiting on either side.

Knock knock!

“Can they see this?”

“I’m sure they’ll be able to.”

The battlesuit’s punch power is enough to make a dent on an armored car. Breaking a wall is nothing. Even if it is stronger than they thought, all they have to do is set off a bomb.

They do not do that though because the commotion could bring Blood Parasites to them. Since it is an annihilation mission, they need to kill them as they appear. The problem is that their power is currently divided. They will fight if they cannot avoid a battle, but 2 parties do not have to take on everything. What if a level 6 hears the explosion and appears? 4 or 5 people will die at the least.

“We radioed in, so let’s wait.”

“We’ll be 40 people if we join with those on the other side. Since it’s a party made up of rankers like party 1, our survival rate will go up, won’t it? I really want to go back alive. Let’s be careful and more careful.”

The 20 Lifers agree with the party leader, and sit with their backs against the wall. It is simple. They do not need to find the path for now. They can wait like this until parties 4 and 10 come near.

“How deep do you think this is?”

“I’m sure it’s about 1m.”

Was it because they were bored? 2 Lifers approached the channel. The party leader did not stop them.

It is all the same whether they stay seated or stay nearby. And it may seem useless, but it is not a bad idea to have the channel depth measured.

A Lifer takes out a tape measure and looks down into the channel. He will stop if something gets caught. That will be the ground.

“Wow! It’s 3m! It’s deeper than I thought.”

“Oho!”

It is deep enough for someone to drown in. They cannot even see into it because it is so dirty with garbage. They cannot identify the situation inside with heat sensors either because it is cold. And the field scan cannot penetrate through water.

“Huh?”

“What is it?”

“The tape measure moved.”

The Lifer looks puzzled. Something bumped into the tape measure as it passed by. Could it be that his hand was shaky? Or was it hit with garbage?

[Strengthen battlesuit outer armor! Weak movement did hit the tape measure.]

Papat!

The Lifer is surprised and goes backward. The helper in his battlesuit has given him the information.

“Leader! Something is inside the water!”

The Lifers are surprised and take out their weapons. The party leaders also gulp and check their senses.

“It’s coming.”

“In the back!”

It is not in the water. Writhing shadows are coming out of the path that they came through. They are Blood Parasites.

“It seems like those guys used the waterway.”

“Prepared to shoot!”

A party leader raises his hand. The Lifers aim at the Blood Parasites with their guns. There are a lot of them, but they are all just level 1. They feel stupid for having been nervous.

“Shoot.”

Pew pew pew pew!

Dozens of submachine guns go off and pelt the Blood Parasites. They cannot get close and get pushed back by the bullets, rolling away. Some even ran away on their own.

“They’re just Blood Parasites, but we \*\*\*

“Thank you!”

The chief is the rank of Strategist in the world federation. They have caught their enemies while recoiling. Results are results.

Burble burble.

When the Lifers’ attention focused on the Blood Parasites, a bubble the size of a person’s head formed in the center of the channel. The Lifers did not notice it because its sound was overshadowed by the sounds of shooting and the Blood Parasites

screaming. And that was a signal for another battle.

Bang!

2 large mutants spring out of the water, coiled like snakes. It happened unexpectedly. Rotten water wets the battlesuits.

Kyak!

“They’re Blood Suckers!”

Bang bang!

The 2 Blood Suckers that have come on land sweep the Lifers with a strong whip of their tails. The space is small and they are close to each other, so they all fall over like bowling pins.

Boom bang bang!

Most of them hit the wall or went flying far, but a few unlucky Lifers fell into the rotten water of the channel. Battlesuits are waterproof, so the water did not go through. If it had, that would have been another kind of hell.

If the 1st round was the Blood Parasites’ gimmick, the 2nd is the level 5 Blood Suckers’ surprise attack. It was not even over yet. There is still a 3rd round.

“Over – over there!”

“What!”

The passage that the Lifers took to get here is completely full with hundreds of Blood Devils. They are swarming in like bees swarming to a hive.

“How dare they! Brace up the battle line and block the front! We’ll take these guys!”

Woong!

20 people’s battlesuits shake. Surprise attack? They have used their heads, but this much cannot do anything to 2 parties. They had just been surprised for a moment.

“We’ll kill you!”

Bang!

2 party leaders fly at the 2 Blood Suckers. At the same time, 18 Lifers delve into the Blood Devils coming at them from the front. Underpass does not follow the form of a regular waterway. It is figured so that citizens can escape if emergencies arise in the large city, so it is a space where they need to battle in close quarters.

Bang!

One of the thorns on the Blood Sucker's body is destroyed. It is as thick as a person's arm, and grazes a party leader's battlesuit as it flies by.

The thorn is embedded so far in the wall that it is not visible. While he was turning his body to avoid the thorn, the Blood Sucker smacked down on the battlesuit.

It is a disadvantageous terrain for everyone, Lifers, Blood Suckers, and Blood Devils alike. It is complete chaos. They will probably win if they keep going like this, but battlesuits will be destroyed.

A Blood Sucker straightens its body vertically. Its body is enclosed by the waterway, but the length from its head to tail seems to reach about 25m. As it is more evolved than the Blood Devil, it is more unsightly and its coloring is darker. They are exactly the same as those that Lifers saw in the virtual game.

'Did they know the force was coming and send an advance team? In order to get an idea of the enemy's ability to fight?'

The party leader thinks as he watches the Blood Sucker. It is just a guess. The Blood race must be pretty smart from the way they used trickery in a feint operation. He cannot tell if their leader is smart or if these guys are smart.

[Parties 5 and 9! Engaged with Blood Suckers!]

The radio comes in constantly. They do not have the time to report properly. In that time, they kill one more. Other parties are far away, and cannot even come because of the wall. These 20 people need to handle it.

“Leader! I’ll support you!”

“What about the front?”

“1 party can handle it!”

10 people are plenty able to block the Blood Devils that are simply coming at them from the front. As long as they do not experience a concentrated attack, it is easy to kill several at a time.

8 Lifers attack from behind the Blood Suckers. They brandish their vibrating weapons or pull out the thorns. As they do so, the Blood Suckers become more frantic.

# Chapter 140

---

Papapat!

Cha Jun Sung runs. His party members run after him. They heard the radio regarding the battle. Parties 5 and 9 encountered Blood Suckers. They will probably not fall to a few of those guys because the Lifers all have battlesuits, but the battle is happening nearby. The noise from battling is shaking up the waterway anyway. Mutants would have already heard this with their enhanced senses.

“Jun Sung! It’s blocked!”

A dead end. Cha Jun Sung’s group is blocked off as parties 5 and 9 had been.

Cha Jun Sung bashes the wall. He can hear Lifers’ explosions and mutants’ screaming beyond the wall.

“Stand back.”

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung makes a hole in the wall with his fist. He pulls the pin from a grenade and passes it into the hole. They can get 100% of the effects of the grenade if it goes off in the center.

Bang bang bang bang!

The wall cracks. But one was not be enough, so it stops along the way. The wall is extremely thick as it is not a path that they are supposed to be able to take.

Bang bang!

He puts 2 grenades in together. The wall finally explodes and collapses with dust filling the foreground.

“Support!”

“Go!”

Cha Jun Sung speaks as he flies forward. The Lifers are leaning towards the win after a long period of battling, but it will end faster with help.

Boom!

‘Tail whip.’

It is a skill that they all use, from the Blood Devils to the Blood Lord. There is a great difference in the range of power, but they cannot be hit by one from a Blood Sucker.

Bang!

The wall is bashed in under the force of what is like a bat with nails sticking out of it. Even still, the thorns do not break and are perfectly fine.

Koharu goes on top of a Blood Sucker's back, and slashes with her dagger. Violet jabs mostly at the chest and stomach with her javelin. Rankers are faced on the other side as well.

Boom boom boom!

Koharu and Violet fall away from the Blood Sucker. Dozens of thorns are launched in all directions. What would happen if they properly get hit with one of those?

New thorns form from where the old ones fly off. They do not form infinitely, but there is a large factor in stamina. If the Blood Suckers are tired or do not have sufficient nutrients, they cannot do it. This means that they are still full of energy.

Dozens of Lifers stick their vibrating weapons into the bodies of the Blood Suckers. Blood splatters. The ones that are really hard to handle are the ones with acid mixed into their blood. Fortunately, this is not the case for the Blood Suckers.

Ping ping ping!

They rotate their bodies to spin while launching thorns. They are

making such a fuss. No matter how energized they are, there are 40 battlesuit owners. There are a lot of Blood Devils, but not enough to guard 2 Blood Suckers.

The Blood Suckers pretend to attack, turn their heads to the water, and jump in. They felt that there is nothing good in fighting a losing battle. The water is rotten but it is where they were born and raised, so there will be a way out.

“It’s running away!”

“Get it!”

A few Lifers grab the tails of the Blood Suckers trying to get away, and pull.

Bang bang!

Reverse boosters turn on and push the Lifers backwards. The Blood Suckers push away as much as they are being pulled. The Lifers cannot let them go. They especially need to kill the level 5s. It is a level that becomes a direct threat to the force. They need to reduce the numbers while they are separated like this.

Kyak!

Bang bang!

Cha Jun Sung gives a strong kick to the mouth of a howling Blood Sucker. He avoids their blades and attacks a relatively weak part.

The flesh rips. The kick applied an upper cut. Its head folds back and the Blood Sucker is looking at the ceiling. With that time, the Lifers swarm in.

They jab, cut, and dig into them. The Blood Suckers become covered in accumulating wounds. On the opposite side, the Blood Devils have been taken care of for the most part.

The Blood Suckers draw their breaths. They are on the brink of death, but not dead.

“Who’s going to finish it?”

The party leaders glance at party 10. Killing the 2 Blood Suckers is worth at least 300,000 points.

“Figure it out amongst yourselves.”

“Huh? Okay!”

Cha Jun Sung stopped showing interest. He is not greedy about such things.

[You have earned 180,000 points and 54,000 achievement

points.]

The party leaders each kill one. 180,000 points. They are top level, like the Caicus. They are opponents that they could not guarantee to beat if they had gone one-on-one instead of with dozens of Lifers. It is chilling to think of things like this swarming to them with level 6s.

“Are they all dead?”

“Sorry. We lost a few.”

The Lifers cannot pick their heads up. A few Blood Devils ran away. There were several hundreds of them even if they are weak, so they ran away while their peers died.

[This is parties 5 and 9. We have joined parties 4 and 10. We killed 2 Blood Suckers and hundreds of Blood Devils! There are no Lifer deaths.]

[You did well. Let's meet up as soon as possible.]

If they meet up once more, they will become a full force. It would be good if there is no large scale battle until then.

---

A bizarre alien creature twice the size of a normal Blood Sucker looks up into the open ceiling. It has a height reaching about 100m. The shape of the hole is strange, but it looks to be about 30 to 40m deep. The wreckage from the collapsing ceiling is rolling around all over the Public Underground.

A trace of the king.

The Blood Lord had come out twice, and created this hole to go outside. Sunlight seeps in through the hole. It was an incredibly thick wall, but the Blood Lord smashed it with one blow and ran.

The Blood Lord looking at the hole now is the Blood Sucker tribe's Elder and born with their blood. If terms of humans, it would be about the direct brother of the former king. This is probably why it is a Blood Sucker but is almost 50m tall. The mission description mentioned that the Elder is the powerful servant.

Grr!

4 Blood Suckers crawl to the Elder's side. They are not as large as the Elder, but about one half as greater than normal Blood Suckers.

They are level 6. Cha Jun Sung's group needs to fight 5 level 6s. They have come to the worst case scenario in which more than half of the power must fight against level 6s.

The leader Blood Suckers look wide and far around the Public Underground. Hundreds of thousands of cocoons are growing quickly. They have inexperienced Blood Suckers and Blood Devils everywhere to guard those cocoons. They are not normal cocoons. They were born from the king.

The 4 leaders have blood of the invited king. That is why they have surpassed level 5 limitations and reached level 6. If all of those cocoons are born, they can become like the Elder and leaders. Of course only 0.1% of those develop into adults. The other 99.9% become the nutrients necessary for the 0.1% to develop.

Kyak!

Kung?

Injured Blood Devils come in through the Public Underground's entrance. One of the leaders leaves its position in order to get a grasp of the situation. The Blood Devils explain in mutant language. It is a mistake to think that humans are the only technically accomplished.

Kung!

The level 6 roars. Enemies have broken in. An enemy at such an important time. The Blood Devils tremble in dreading at the roar.

Huek!

A leader tells the Elder, 'I'll go kill them.'

Kruk.

The Elder does not permit it. They need to preserve power and

protect the cocoons. The Blood Devils and Parasites outside are their eyes and ears, minimal troops to defend the outside on small scales. The Blood Suckers sent this time were supposed to make rounds at checkpoints and the Underpass to act as patrols that resolve problems.

Kyak!

The leader has a fiery personality and reacts. Mutants also have individual personalities.

Kung!

‘No.’

Public Underground is spacious, but Underpass as a waterway is not ideal for Blood Suckers to fight in. Level 6s are so big that they cannot move easily. Even if the leaders go out, they will not be of much help.

Koo!

Kung!

The Elder becomes angry when the leader keeps reacting. They will sweep through the surroundings once the living becomes typified. Those below level 5 surpass dreading and feel fear, while only the level 6s withstand the moment.

Bang bang!

The Elder's tail slams down on the ground. It is an attack from a 50m monster. The floor cracks without resistance. It looks like a 10 story building would fall over if hit with that.

Kung!

The Blood Suckers listen to the Elder's orders and move the debris stuck next to the Blood Devils. They block the only entrance so that no one can come in. They fill the entrance with boulders that weigh from dozens of kilograms to tons. It is not something that can be brought down with bombs. No matter how many times they are smashed, there will be more. It may be uncomfortable, but the Blood Sucker clan can move through the hole in the ceiling. There is no reason to use the entrance.

[We'll wait until the king comes in. Avoid any unnecessary battles.]

Power is law for mutants. The weak must bow and listen. The Elder is the strongest after the Blood Lord. They all obey the Elder's will, from the lowest Blood Parasites to leader Blood Suckers. Protecting the cocoons is top priority.

# Chapter 141

---

“Wow! We’ve finally met up.”

The force ultimately became whole after 4 days. The place was extremely vast, so they wandered here and there. There were no battles that caused tension after the attack from the Blood Suckers. They only ran into Blood Devils and Blood Parasites.

“It’s hard to find the path.”

“We’re using the compact detection robot to create a map. We should be able to find it after digging through everything one by one.”

Strategist laughs at Cha Jun Sung’s words. The world federation Lifers started searching everywhere by releasing compact detection robots as soon as they were summoned to their separate locations. If they don’t do this because it was a bother, they would suffer the inconvenience of going in circles. There really is nothing to be so bothered by either. If they just activate it in the beginning, the robot would handle the rest on its own. They need to be extra careful with them because, even though each is worth 2 million points, they are weak enough that a bullet can penetrate through them. They have as many handicaps as they have uses.

“You said that you found a way out?”

“Yes. It looks like each area has one.”

Beep beep!

Strategist showed them a holographic map saved on his PDA. They can see a place where something like a ladder is marked. That is the exit to get out of Underpass. Strategist does not intend to go out. Their goal is to go deeper underground, not to go outside.

“You heard that roar, right?”

“Perfectly.”

A few days ago after they lost a few Blood Devils in the fight against the Blood Suckers, they heard a hair-raising roar. It was loud enough to ring throughout Underpass. Strategist analyzed the sound with his battlesuit and calculated its estimated location.

They kept it as an uncertain, unclear indicator. They’re creating the map now. Unless the Underpass is infinitely large, they will meet at some point.

“Underpass is circular. I’m not 100% sure, but we have searched 60 to 70% from what we’ve marked until now.”

“So, we just have to go through the rest.”

“The problem is after that.”

How great would it be if the mission was to just find and complete? They cannot even imagine what kind of monster is waiting for them. The force placed the search as their priority. Their top goal is to dissect Underpass. That is the only way they will be able to find the way to Public Underground.

The Lifers had been moving without time to stop, and are now on a break. They have plenty of stamina, but proper sleep and meals are absolutely necessary. All kinds of food come out of their space compression bags. As magic bags, they are full of delicious foods.

Beep beep!

Strategist was resting when he saw an alert from his compact detection robot and straightened his body. It picked up multiple vital responses. There was a lot. It easily surpasses tens of thousands. He is certain that it is where the Blood Parasites are gathered.

“950m northeast, detection of vital responses in the tens of thousands. We’ll go right away.”

It is too far, so there are limits to how the cameras can be used. If they go within 500m, they can see what the detection robot is seeing.

The force moves in tension. The detection robot’s information was shared with everyone. There are more and more being detected. They are going further into the robot’s range.

Pat!

The camera turns on as soon as they enter the permissible range. The camera shakes from top to bottom as though it is digging into the ground. They do not see mutants.

“What!”

“Goodness!”

Woong!

The detection robot finishes spelunking and comes out. The force is speechless. Cocoons stuck all over a wall; it is impossible to count all of them. The cocoons are not the most shocking part.

“Blood Sucker?”

“Why is it so big?”

A giant Blood Sucker is coiled up in the center of the cocoons. It is a warden, Public Underground’s boss. Their skin crawls even though they are looking at it through a camera.

‘Mutation, evolution.’

Cha Jun Sung thinks to himself. It is the image of a top level 6.

Wiing!

The detection robot turns its view. The camera films Public Underground. There are dozens of Blood Suckers in position everywhere. There are hordes of Blood Devils.

“That’s too much.”

“We have to take all of those on?”

5 huge Blood Suckers. The one in the middle of the cocoons is the biggest and the other 4 are similar to each other. They are variants.

Strategist sent the detection robot in further. Robots do not experience fear.

“There’s a hole in the ceiling.”

“It’s a trace of the Blood Lord, right?”

Cha Jun Sung looks at Glare Gun. They are the only 2 people who have caught Blood Lords before.

“It’s completed its molting perfectly. It’ll be bigger than 200m.”

Blood Lord is one of the top 10 largest of the Nightmares.

“It must have created a path for itself because it is too big to move around Underpass.”

“Those level 6s over there, especially that big one, they’ll have to move around through the ceiling.”

“Do you think they blocked the entrance because of us?”

“I think so.”

“Damn it. How do we kill all of them?”

Nuclear grumbles. It is a scene that could make him vomit. There are 5 level 6s.

“We’ll get the detection robot back first, and then come up with a plan.”

Wiing!

Strategist called the detection robot, but a weak sound leaked out.

Boom!

The Elder had been sleeping, but blinked open its red eyes, and launched a thorn. A thorn the size of a human leg pierced through the robot precisely. It has outstanding senses. It is 100m away, but was able to hit the robot a size of a fist.

Its thorn regenerates. There is no movement.

“Let’s just plan it out.”

2 million points just evaporated.

# Chapter 7 | Inner Madness

---

Roar!

The Elder was asleep in the center of the cocoons when it heard a beast's roar and woke up.

It does not fall asleep in order to always remain active. Its open eyes are not sleepy either. It is just slightly opened. It can switch to combat mode whenever it wants to.

It is noisy beyond the ceiling. The leaders took the Blood Suckers and Blood Devils hunting. The clan are living beings. They will die if they do not eat.

Boom!

The ceiling is 100m tall, and dozens of mutants the size of elephants fall down.

They are the double headed giants living above them. They caught a lot of them, but the noise does not stop.

Roar!

A roar comes out beyond the leaders' force. They must be fighting strong mutants, and it is taking much more time than when they were fighting the double headed giants.

The Elder knows what the leaders are going after. The blood clan is the upper line in power dynamics, so it didn't have to worry.

Boom boom boom!

Their hunting was a success. Mutants 4 times the size of double headed giants plummet to fall on top of the corpses. They normally would have died, but they survived because the double headed giants that died first acted as cushions.

Boom boom!

Double headed kings. They are also top level 6 mutants. The leaders' bodies are covered in wounds.

They are unable to hold their bodies up after the impact of falling. No matter how much cushioning the giants provided for them, monsters weighing tons fell 100m to the ground. As their bones broke, their organs were ruptured. They will become better after a few days with mutant resilience, but that is not possible in this situation.

Bang!

The Elder slams its tail down on the double headed kings.

They went rolling because they didn't have the strength to

withstand it. They are strong enough that they could have tied if they had faced off under normal conditions. Victory and defeat were easily determined because they didn't have the strength to react.

The leaders were done with hunting and climb back down the wall. They need to end it swiftly. There's a lot of mutants as strong as the double headed giants above them. That's why the leaders doesn't go around by themselves very often and wanders in hundreds.

It's usually a bother, but they survive by going around Underpass to find preys.

Beyond the ceiling is an area of predators that not even the Elder can take on. But, the Blood Lord killed them before going on its expedition. That is how the blood clan came here.

Grr!

The Elder looks at the entrance. It can feel that the enemy is close. They have been sending strange insects for the past few days, but it has been killing them every time it sees them. There are Blood Suckers covering the entrance just in case. The enemy will not be able to get through but, if they do, it intends to kill them one by one. It cannot let them come inside.

\*\*\*

The force took appropriate positions and looked for ways to get through the entrance. They are ready to accept ideas regardless of position.

The problem is that there is no clear count even after holding meetings for several days.

It might be possible to get through by setting off bombs. The problem is that if they do that, they will draw the blood clan's attention.

Also, the entrance is not very wide. It is packed if 2 or 3 people stand shoulder to shoulder. When they sent the last detector robot a day ago, they saw that Blood Suckers and Blood Devils were filling the entrance. What could this mean?

“Can’t we go down through the hole?”

“The hole.”

Strategist thought about what a force member suggestion. The giant hole in the Public Underground ceiling – it would be the best if they could go down through that. They can create shock from the top or throw bombs. They could take advantage of their position and make a sweep. That is only if they could get down.

“Leaving Underpass means leaving the mission area. This is level C advancement, but there’s no guarantee that the area above is a lower level than this.”

Even if it is a lower level than Underpass, they do not know how much they will need to battle until they get near the hole. They would only need to fight once, but this would make them fight more than they need to. A lot of people will think that being the final decision maker is great, but it is good to be an underling at times. They just have to do as they are told.

[Current location: 952. 266. 85.]

Whether they are under or above ground, only the depth is different and the location is pretty much the same. If they just follow the locations as a guide, they will be able to arrive.

“What do you think about just blowing the whole thing up?”

Nuclear makes a suggestion. They didn’t have anything like white phosphorus, but they brought a lot of powerful bombs like dynamites. They prepared fully because it is an advancement mission.

“The entrance will collapse if we do that.”

Underpass is not ideal to use bombs in that blow buildings away, excluding basic ones. If they are misused, they will sweep through everything regardless of enemies and allies.

“I didn’t know we’d end up in a battle of wits against mutants.”

“I know, right?”

In terms of a war, the force is a siege and the blood clan is the residing. Generally to bring on a siege, they need to have 3 times the power of the residing. However, the siege is weaker.

“Let’s go out. It won’t be bad to see some sunlight.”

Strategist spoke after thinking for a while. They have made no progress with the entrance in front of them for days. It seems like there will be none in the near future. It would be better to go to the hole rather than dragging out time waiting here.

\*\*\*

[Level C Mission: Black Devil’s Shadow] [Goal: Attainment]

[Description: The Black Devil was dealing with the darkness when it was trampled by the ascending king’s power. A lone shadow left behind. A tremendous host is needed for a still weak shadow to develop into a Black Devil. When will an opportunity come? Even today, the shadow hopes to get revenge.]

[Reward: 1.8 million points. Lucky box.]

# Chapter 142

---

“.....”

“Do we have to go further?”

The force was uncomfortable. The moment they climbed the ladder out of Underpass, special mission Black Devil's Shadow was activated. It was 1.8 million points. They were still wondering how to complete a 2 million point mission, but they have gotten caught up in one that was almost there. Since it had only been activated and they had not started, it gets canceled once they go back into Underpass. It was not the worst-case scenario.

“Black Devil? I think I can tell what it is if it's a parasitic type.”

The rankers thought of different mutants. Level C means level 6.

There was nothing that matched among level 6s. It said that it was uncompleted. There was a level 7 that matched the description perfectly.

“Oriax.”

“What's an Oriax?”

“A level 7 mutant. It's mostly active at night. It has a meek nature too.”

Cha Jun Sung explained it to Park Jin Hyuk. It is parasitic, but it does not eat hosts or lay eggs like parasites do. Is it possession? It goes inside the host and brings out the limits to its potential. That is how it brings out the strength of level 7. Once the Oriax gives up the parasitism, the host goes back to the normal state.

It does not kill living beings, but is parasitic. It is mild in nature as well. How mild nated could a mutant possibly be? Unless it is hungry, it does not attack anything that is not a threat to it. In the virtual version, the Oriax's influence is higher in the distribution chart than that of other mutants. This was because it posed a small threat to survival. It would have been a level B mision if the Oriax had been an adult, but it must be level C because it had not been able to find a host and is in an immature state.

“Then it must be safe?”

“That’s not it. What if we get caught when it’s hungry? We need to fight.”

They can be guaranteed a certain amount of safety if they only move during the daytime. The Oriax hates daytime. They are able to show their full potential in darkness.

“It’ll be mid to top level 6 even in its immature state.”

“Don’t you think it’ll be doable?”

“There will probably be sacrifices, but we should be able to kill it because it’s a level 7.”

Half of the rankers had caught Oriaxes before. Cha Jun Sung had as well. Level 7s are not particularly separated into low and mid levels. The level is the end. Of course there was a difference between the strong and weak within the same level. The Oriax is one of the top level 7s. They needed to be aware of a certain amount of danger.

The force members looked at the hole behind them. It was not too late. If they got down, they could focus on the Public Underground mission.

“Strategist. There really isn’t a way to get through the entrance?”

“We’ll find a way to get through.”

They couldn’t go in. Say they opened the entrance by blowing it up with bombs. Then what happens? Blood Suckers were waiting in front to take their enemies down one by one.

What if they didn’t go down and just throw bombs? Public Underground’s width was that of a small town. Even if they threw reinforced bombs, the enemies could get out of the explosion radius. If the enemy attacked right when they were trying to go in, a few members of the force would have to fight with a large number of mutants.

“Ugh! If only biochemical gas guns worked!”

Nuclear paces. It was as he said. If only the biochemical gas guns had worked, they could have thrown it inside and cleared out a safe area for them. They would have been able to use the gas mask function on their battlesuits.

It was the method with the highest possibility until now, but after blowing them up on the Blood Suckers’ bodies, they didn’t cause chemical reactions. It was not because they died.

There was no biochemical weapon as strong as the virus. Mutants have incredible immunity due to their infection with the A virus, so Blood Suckers are able to withstand biochemical weapons. What happens if they use it anyway, and their gas masking functions stopped working? If they took even one breath, the force would lose all attack power.

“Let’s attack the ground like this.”

Weapon Master had been silent with his arms crossed, when he spoke up for the first time.

“We’ll be able to use 100% of the force’s ability to fight with this terrain.”

He thought it would be better to do this than to try to get through the entrance. It was wide. They had a full view. Even if mutants came swarming in, they could use all of their weapons. They would

get to the hole in the ceiling without fighting if they were lucky. The Oriax's mild personality had a part in coming to this decision as well.

"If we really don't think we can do it, it's okay to complete Black Devil's Shadow and re-enter Public Underground. Since the top is empty, there's no reason to risk everything for the entrance."

The force members clapped. It was as Weapon Master said. It was a roundabout way, but it was safe.

"It's a good method."

"Yeah."

Cha Jun Sung agreed. Their actions were easier on the ground. It was a factor that they couldn't ignore.

"If everyone is thinking the same thing, we'll go through with it."

Strategist made the decision. They might need to complete 2 missions, but it was not a good method to keep pushing one thing without grounds. Their goal was to complete the advanced mission. Even if the process was a bit complicated, there was enough reason to go through obstacles if the results were advantageous.

[Force moving.]

They heard the radio and the battle line moved. 2 parties made of non-battle Lifers stood in the center, and 8 parties were divided into 2 of east and west to form a boundary.

The ground was a small city that had been reduced to ruins. Half of it was mixed with nature because there was no human touch.

[12.7km remaining until the location. Do not put your guards down.]

The goal of the new mission was to find and kill one Oriax, but there would be a fair amount of level 5 and 6s in this kind of city. It would be better to discover them early on to avoid engagement and battle only when it was absolutely necessary.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung jumped into the air. His powerful turning kick, accompanied by the booster, smashed Congo's chin.

Its appearance was similar to a gorilla, but it was a level 4 mutant that was almost 4m in size.

Its chin bone was crushed, but such an injury didn't kill it. Even so, Cha Jun Sung is satisfied with the hit and goes in search of another opponent.

The Congo grabbed its chin and ran to catch Cha Jun Sung, who hit it and left. But its legs were hot. Precisely, it was its heels.

Koharu stabbed at the achilles tendons with her daggers. With painful soreness and impaired mobility, the Congo looked back. In the time that its attention was turned away, Violet appeared from the front and penetrated the Congo's chest with her javelin.

“Violet! On top!”

“Huh!”

Bang bang!

Violet turns and blocked the body coming from above with her spear.

The impact from the spear flowed through her battleshoot and out through her feet to hit the floor.

Tang tang tang!

Park Jin Hyuk sniped at the head of the Congo attacking Violet. Koharu also added in a bit of aid, and focused on trying to get rid of at least another one.

Cha Jun Sung's group was not the only busy group. The whole force was experiencing it. It took 4 days to go 28km. It was too

slow. It could not be helped because they protected themselves as best as they could while moving, avoiding mutants.

The distance of 12.7km to the ceiling coordinates was marked in a straight line. The distance was multiplied because they were going back and forth.

The distribution of mutants here was incredible. It was hard to believe that this was a 1.8 million point mission. One unique aspect was that as Adumoque's area, the different species living here had hostile relationships.

So there was no worry of a concentrated attack, but battles were fierce once they start because the mutants' levels are so high. Like it was now.

Tutututu!

A few force members handled a machine gun as large as a person, and showered down on the Congos. They didn't shoot blindly. They only shot at the heads of those on the outside. If they shoot wildly, they could hit allies.

“There are so many of them!”

“Kill them!”

Hundreds of Congos were surrounding them. Not all of them were level 4s, and 70% are level 3. However, there were so many of

them that it was a melee. The force fights divided into parties. If they stuck together in this wide space, there were restrictions to their movement.

Woong!

The force members avoided the Congos' attacks, took out rapid charging devices, and attached them to their battleshoots. They used the devices twice, and they were really useful items.

They couldn't expect a full charge because they kept using energy, but there was no reason for them to become empty cans because they charged as much as they consumed.

Cha Jun Sung cut a Congo's arm with his Time Limit. His party members swarmed to the injured Congo. It was a group battle. They refrained from individual action, and acted mainly in team play.

Bang bang!

There was an explosion from afar, accompanied by acrid smoke. It was Nuclear's doing. Whenever rankers created room, he approached a Congo and shoved a bomb in its mouth. The head exploded and it died.

Cha Jun Sung sighs and looked around. 10 parties annihilated the Congos. Others are either done or finishing up.

“I thought I was going to die.”

“You did well.”

They encouraged each other. It was a relief that there were no level 5 and 6s. If they had been mixed into these hundreds, the Lifers would have ended up with a death count.

They went into battle 3 times while going 29km. All 3 times were this difficult. As long as they were not overwhelmingly strong, there was no effect on volume.

“It said that the mission name is Black Devil’s Shadow, right?”

“Shadow my ass! Oy! Is this an attainment mission? It’s annihilation.”

The number coming at them was high level. They didn’t see any level 1 or 2. The lowest were level 3 and 4. They killed several hundreds and were exhausted.

Beep beep!

[The remaining distance is 983m.]

Strategist calculated the distance. They were close. When thinking of this as the Congo’s area, there could no longer be any battles until they arrived at their destination. If they were

unlucky, they could step into another's area.

The force members reorganized and went the rest of the way. They still had slack because they packed plenty of articles for them. Fortunately, unwelcome guests did not appear because this was the home of the Congos they just annihilated.

“Is this it?”

“Whew! It’s impressive. This means that blood parasites are swarming under this, right?”

It was the hole that they saw briefly through the detection robots.

It was like looking at an ant hell that they couldn’t get out of once they fall in. Except for the center where sunlight seeps in through, the entire surrounding area was dark.

“I’ll take a look around. Prepare for an attack.”

[Night vision activated.]

Woong!

Strategist activated night vision and checked inside Public Underground. He couldn’t see well, so he moved to the center of the hole.

“Um.”

“What is it?”

[Share view.]

Strategist shared what he was seeing with the force on a hologram.

“Huh?”

“I don’t see anything.”

# Chapter 143

---

All they see are mutant corpses and skins. The only things that are alive and moving must be hiding in corners, because they cannot distinguish them.

On top of that, they cannot measure the ceiling thickness. It is thicker than a line of apartments. Because of the angle, they need to ride it down if they want to see deep inside.

‘What should we do?’

Strategist thinks. He had come up with a plan on their way here. It is a good location to attack Public Underground, but it is in the middle of the city. He needs to consider the appearance of mutants including Adumoques.

Four parties built a wall to take on the enemies outside and six parties will target the ceiling. They will first throw a biochemical gas gun in, then a shock grenade to spread the range. Even if this does not work against Blood Suckers, it will against the Blood Devils and Blood Parasites to the cocoons.

They can get rid of some of the underlings like this. The blood clan will be furious and they’ll either come out through the ceiling or around through the blocked entrance.

Whatever situation, it is advantageous for the force. If they come out through the ceiling, the force can kill them with machine guns, artillery, laser pulverizers, and mines that have been prepared in

advance. The force will become the residing while the blood clan brings on the siege.

It is alright if they come around through the entrance as well. Mutants on ground are hostile and if enemies invade, mutants and humans are both considered enemies. They may not have to do anything to get the job done.

‘It’s all just assumptions.’

These present situations when everything goes as they want without any variables.

“Someone needs to go down and take a look at the dynamics. We can’t just attack wildly.”

“How many people are going down?”

“One person.”

The force members gulp. He wants one person to go down, not a party unit or even a few people? If that person is attacked, he or she could die.

“Someone familiar with using the booster will need to go down.”

It is basically climbing down a collapsed wall, but to prevent falling and prepare against enemy attack, the person needs to be

used to the booster's functions.

The force members look to one place.

“What? Why?”

Cha Jun Sung is taken aback. He is confident in using the booster. His battlesuit fighting uses the booster as a foundation. But he is also human. He does not want to go in.

“Jun Sung, it looks like you've been chosen.”

“Ah.”

Park Jin Hyuk pats Cha Jun Sung's shoulder. He has been chosen by the others.

“Can we leave it to you?”

“I guess it can't be helped.”

Cha Jun Sung allows it. He decides to think about contribution. They need to have enough contribution to advance. He will gain as much as other people are averse to it.

It is deep and dark. Cha Jun Sung takes a deep breath and prepares to go down.

That is when they heard a strange sound. Inside Public Underground? No. It is outside, on the ground where the force is.

“Oh no. Why now.....”

Strategist’s voice trembles. He backs away from the hole and the force members follow suit.

Chamma Sword, Weapon Master, and the rankers take out their vibration weapons and watch the front. Cha Jun Sung was the only person who was a step behind with a late reaction because he had been looking down into the hole.

“Huh?”

He raised his head. He sees something. If Cha Jun Sung is at the 6:00 position, it is at 12:00, directly on the other side. It is small. It will not even be half of Cha Jun Sung’s height. It is a slimy black liquid, the highest level monster appearing in fantasy novels.

Kik?

“O – Oriax.....”

It is the basic form that has not yet found a host. Its battle style is changing its body into any form it wants from that state. It can split into particles like amoebas and can create sharp weapons. It is

so fast is it difficult to distinguish because it jumps around like a spring.

There is a reason why it has been ranked in level 6 even though it looks like that.

“Jun – Jun Sung.”

“Sh.”

Cha Jun Sung puts a finger to his lips when Park Jin Hyuk calls out to him. The force members who already saw the Oriax created distance, but Cha Jun Sung had not been able to do so because his attention had been elsewhere, and he still could not move after seeing it.

‘Stay calm.’

It has a meek nature. As long as it does not feel threatened, hungry, or the need to look for a host, it will just pass them by.

The force will not attack, and the Oriax would not have decided on a human as a host. In the virtual game, the Oriax used level 6 and 7s as hosts. Its criteria for choosing is a fresh life with potential, and it does not even look at humans that do not live up to standards. He just needs to pray that it is not hungry.

‘It’s too close. Will we be able to react?’

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung puts his battlesuit on full activation. 30m is the distance that the Oriax can go in 0.1 seconds.

‘Go. Please just go.’

If it attacks, Cha Jun Sung is first. He is prey that is alone and closest. There is no reason for it to go where 99 people are gathered together.

Something black forms in the Oriax’s body. The color and shape are different, but it looks like an eye. No, it is an eye. That eye looks at Cha Jun Sung. Everyone holds their breaths as they watch. They did not even open their mouths.

His hand goes to his Time Limit automatically. If it attacks, avoiding it is not enough. He will crush it as he veers away from it. No matter how strong it is, it is immature without a host and the force can take it.

The eye comes out. It is still looking at Cha Jun Sung. It should have looked at the force at least once, but it does not. What is it looking at? Is there something unusual about Cha Jun Sung to a mutant’s eye?

The Oriax changes. A clear shape is forming from the liquid. Glare Gun shouts. It changed into Cha Jun Sung’s image.

“That – that!”

“Get away, Overload!”

“Fuck.....”

Cha Jun Sung swears. When the Oriax chooses a host, it changes to mirror the form. They do not know why. It was just known as a habit in the virtual version.

“Kill it!”

Papat!

The rankers got Cha Jun Sung out and ran at the Oriax. The rest of the force form a large circle so that it cannot escape.

The Oriax’s body becomes thin like a thread and digs in among the rankers. It moved faster than the speed of sound and only took 0.1 seconds for it to reach Cha Jun Sung as he had expected.

He brandished his Time Limit and cut a bit of the Oriax, but a small piece touched his battlesuit. Then, that piece seeped through the battlesuit as liquid into Cha Jun Sung’s skin.

The Oriax covers Cha Jun Sung. It swallowed everything from the mind to the body like a blot of black ink of clean white paper.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung! Stay alert!]

Odin called his name again and again, but it was of no use. Injecting the virus antibiotics and medicine built into the battlesuit did not slow the process down.

“We need to kill him!”

“Shut up!”

Bang!

Boom Buster aims his hand cannon at Cha Jun Sung, being encroached upon. Park Jin Hyuk hit his face with his gun. Who is he trying to kill? Koharu, Kyoko, and Violet were also appalled with the awful situation.

“Boom Buster’s right. We need to kill him now.”

“Um.”

The rankers approach Cha Jun Sung. If the Oriax chose him as its host, there will be a reason for it. If it somehow becomes a level 7 mutant, the force will be annihilated.

Ahhh!

The battlesuit cracks. It is evidence that it is unable to withstand the changes inside.

Papat!

The rankers flood to Cha Jun Sung at Strategist's signal. A few force members go to Park Jin Hyuk, who is making a fuss, and block him so he cannot get involved.

When the vibrating weapons were about to penetrate his body, Cha Jun Sung used his own will to fling his body into the hole. The attacks slashed through the air.

“..... Complete... the mission. I’ll... set it up.”

Park Jin Hyuk’s group saw this and stare blankly. What happened is too tremendous to understand, and it happened over too short a period of time.

“We’re getting out of here.”

“Where do you think you’re going! We have to go in immediately to save Jun Sung!”

Strategist ignores Park Jin Hyuk. He does not know what Cha Jun Sung will do inside. He could be killed by the blood clan, or he could kill the clan.

Kyak!

High-pitched screaming, the roars of the blood clan. The clan discovered Cha Jun Sung.

“I’ll go in myself then!”

“Stop him!”

Chamma Sword blocked Park Jin Hyuk’s view. He had heard from Cha Jun Sung that Chamma Sword is a strong ranker, but did not pay mind and tried to attack him.

But right before he could attack, the force heard sudden roaring and froze.

Kooo!

This is the first time they are hearing a roar like this in all of the time that they have played Life Mission. The shriek of a level 7 with the potential to make someone pass out. That is how the devil inside Cha Jun Sung woke up.

# Chapter 144

---

The hole that the Blood Lord made is 150m thick, the height from the floor to ceiling is 100m. Combined, it is 250m. There will be a margin of error, but that is the estimated total.

The height is like falling off of a cliff. A normal being would be smashed to bits upon impact with the ground.

Cha Jun Sung was falling that distance while in transition.

The battlesuit is unable to endure the swelling from inside, and breaks. It does not crumble because of the solid armor.

He looked like a larva that had come out of its skin and was about to become an imago.

The blood clan had been enjoying silence when they looked at the ceiling in concert. This is not a sound they know. They felt intrusion from outside. Cha Jun Sung had gotten through the ceiling and was headed for the ground without their knowing.

The battlesuit booster activated right before a crash and slowed him down. Cha Jun Sung landed on the ground with a small impact.

Odin used its authority to activate the battlesuit. Cha Jun Sung is not dead yet, but that does not mean he is okay. The changes occurring inside of him are so complicated that they cannot be

explained with words.

[Battlesuit..... Destroy rate..... 86%. Repair impossible..... PDA discharged.]

Odin made the judgement call to launch the PDA off of the battlesuit.

It is usually worn on the wrist, but cannot be done so when wearing a battlesuit. With this swelling, the PDA will be destroyed.

The released PDA falls to the ground. It flew fairly far, more than 50m. It is the medium that connects Life Mission and Lifers. It needs to maintain its functions in order to monitor the Lifer's state in real-time.

Kyak!

Hundreds of Blood Devils swarm to Cha Jun Sung. They can tell that he is an enemy even without the Elder or leaders' orders.

Bang bang bang!

Squeezing, cracking, and throwing. The battlesuit's outer armor finally shatters like glass. His impact tights were also reduced to rags.

His body doubled in size once the battlesuit preventing his mutation was gone. His form is similar to that of a human's, but

his body is black as though he has been stained with ink. He is subtly and strangely blending into the humid and dark atmosphere of Public Underground.

Cha Jun Sung opened his eyes. He has 1 on his forehead, 4 on each the left and right sides, looking around with a total of 9 eyes.

In a mix of red and black, the Black Devils get an ominous feeling when they see his eyes and retreat as though to run away.

“Enemy..... Foe..... Kill them.”

The Oriax that absorbed Cha Jun Sung’s knowledge expresses its will in human language. It will avenge its dead mother.

Koooo!

A murderous roar rings through Public Underground.

The Black Devils shrink in fear against the mental decay phenomenon. Only the Blood Suckers are able to endure it. Even among them, the Elder and leaders were the ones to keep their composure.

The wounds that the Blood Devils left heal rapidly. Cha Jun Sung’s body ripples in waves and it looks like a black flame is blazing.

The Elder sweeps the ground with its tail. The offspring of a predator that the king killed has found a host that fits its body. It has been resurrected as a complete adult.

It is strong enough to leave a wound on the king's body. They are not guaranteed to win even if the entire blood clan charges at him, but they have no choice but to fight.

Kyak!

Hundreds of the clan block the surrounding area and flood to Cha Jun Sung. He is hundreds of times stronger than the Blood Devils in all aspects.

He looks like he is going to massacre them. Exploring is of no use. They know their opponent's strength. They need to concentrate their power and face him from the start.

Papapat!

Cha Jun Sung steps around Public Underground and keeps moving.

Blood Suckers chase him as though playing a game of tag. When they cannot catch up to him with speed, they launch hundreds of thorns.

Boom boom boom!

The thorns go through everything, whether it is the walls or the ground. Their size and strength are basically missiles that do not explode.

The thorns showering down like rain do not hit Cha Jun Sung's body. They do not even graze him. It is like he is taunting his opponents.

Boom boom bang!

The Blood Suckers that had been attacking Cha Jun Sung go back and forth and fall in a tangle. Their steps have gotten mixed up and they are a mess.

The Elder could not just watch anymore, and sent the leaders out. Monsters 35m in height crush their subordinate Blood Suckers and storm at Cha Jun Sung.

They are level 6s and react quickly. They figure out where Cha Jun Sung is moving and attack.

One of the leaders shrink down by contracting its neck muscles. Its head passes a few horns flying in a sharp attack.

If the contraction had been a little later, a part of its head would have been sliced.

Cha Jun Sung shakes his left arm. It transforms into a giant sword that is 3m long. It is a weapon that the Oriax that absorbed him is familiar with as well.

The Elder watches the flow of the battle and controls its breathing. Then it flew out within moments. It was as though a spring had been contracted and let go.

Its thorns scratch the stone floor. It rotates its body as it goes, and it is so tremendous that it can be mistaken for a tornado.

The Blood Suckers quickly get out of the way. Their bodies will be destroyed if they are hit. The Elder's size is 50m. Its range is large because it is so big.

Cha Jun Sung was fighting with the Blood Suckers when he saw the attack and flew into the air. He could feel the wind pressure from the spinning.

“Idiots.....!”

The way he speaks is awkward. He cannot speak human language properly now, but he will be proficient once he gets used to it.

Kyak!

The entire blood clan looks up at the ceiling. Cha Jun Sung changed his feet into what looks like a hawk's claws and hung upside down as he looked down.

His thighs, as thick as a man's waist, swells and sucks the air in.

Bang bang!

Stone fragments shower down from the ceiling under a pushing repulsive force. Cha Jun Sung falls and sets down precisely in the center of the Blood Devils.

He does not have his vibrating weapons or battlesuit, but he has the power of a level 7 mutant in his current state. He has already transcended humans.

Blood Suckers are slaughtered mercilessly. Their steel-like thorns and tough skin are cut as their guts spill out. He cuts through them easily with a long sword.

His flesh absorbs the flesh that splatters on him. He is supplementing nutrients with his skin.

The Blood Devils are terrified and watch the battle in front of them. They cannot find a way to interfere.

While Cha Jun Sung was paying attention to one place, the Elder's tail hit his chest. He went flying hundreds of meters under the incredible impact.

Boom boom boom boom!

The Elder launches thorns in succession. Cha Jun Sung avoided them as he went flying, but one went through his stomach and embedded itself there.

“It... stings.”

He does not pull the thorn out. He took his body off of the thorn. A hole the size of a person’s head is left behind on his stomach.

Black liquid fills the hole. It was a wound that should have killed him. Does this mean he is immortal? It seems like he has received no damage.

It is not that he has not received any effect. There is a limit to regeneration. Other than the brain and heart, arms and legs can be regrown thousands of times back to normal as long as the necessary nutrients are there.

The Elder’s neck inflates rapidly. It is a different attack than what has been seen until now, a skill that only the chosen of the blood clan are able to use.

A disgusting green liquid fills the air as if coming out of a hose.

When a few drops fall, the concrete floor bubbles. It has melted the stone. It is acid breath.

The black liquid covering Cha Jun Sung's entire body grows larger like a balloon and protects him. It is like looking at a shield.

The green liquid melted the shield, but it dripped down as though it had met glass. Cha Jun Sung has a satisfied expression. He was using the blood clan as test subjects. It is not difficult to annihilate them.

He has matured, but this is the first time he is fighting. All types of skills come out because the Oriax and Cha Jun Sung's knowledge is combined.

They are filling each other's shortcomings. Of course the principal agent is the Oriax. Cha Jun Sung is just the host that has been absorbed.

Cha Jun Sung takes a step forward, and the blood clan flinches in fear.

Though there are a lot of the enemy, he has the strength to take that power down. The mutant world is the law of the jungle. At this moment, Cha Jun Sung is the law.

“I'll... kill you... and... kill the lord.”

It is not guaranteed that he will win once they come face to face, but it does not seem impossible. This incredible brain will find the way for him.

\*\*\*

Thousands of Blood Devils and dozens of Blood Suckers are cut up.

The leaders are also mixed in there, but they cannot be found. They have been cut up into such small pieces that they cannot be distinguished.

“Lord... north.....”

Cha Jun Sung put his left hand back to the way it normally is. The Elder is passed out under his foot as though it will die soon.

“I won’t kill you first. I’m killing your kids.”

Cha Jun Sung ignores the Elder and looks at the tens of thousands of cocoons stuck on the wall. Even if a human has been absorbed, the Oriax is a mutant.

Though they are of different tribes, he can hold basic communication with the Elder. The Elder speaks to kill it. That the king will get revenge.

“There are a lot.”

There will be no end to it if he tries to kill them one by one. Cha Jun Sung thinks. Even if it had taken a mutant as its host, it would

have acquired the abilities of level 7 but would not have retained a human's knowledge. Its state right now is a mutation.

"Human... mission annihilation?"

Cha Jun Sung looks up at the ceiling. The brain of the human he has absorbed is telling him. He does not have to kill them. If he leaves them, they will come down to take care of the situation.

"We're going home."

The swollen body deflates. A mutant forms with the same shape as Cha Jun Sung's appearance. It is just that it retained the black color in its skin.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung?]

Cha Jun Sung freezes on the spot. He figured out exactly where the sound is coming from.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung?]

"I'm not a human. You're... ack!"

Cha Jun Sung grabs his head. Is the host not completely corrupted?

[A virus level 7 standards, possibility of evolving into level 8 is

over 80%.]

Odin reads the changes inside Cha Jun Sung. If he had been absorbed by the Oriax, he needs to be at the limit of level 7. How is there the possibility of him advancing to level 8? He needs to be taken to the briefing room or Mechanic City for proper testing in order to get an exact evaluation. It is something that cannot be done right now.

His headache ebbs. Though there was a bit of a reaction, it was a sinking ship. Unless the Oriax lets him go, Cha Jun Sung is a bird locked in a cage.

# Chapter 145

---

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung! If you cannot come back to being a human being, you will become the subject of the mission. The upper levels are thinking about creating a level B mission with you at the center through the PDA. Regain your sanity! It is not too late!]

A Lifer who becomes a mutant and is forced to fight other Lifers. It is material that could be used in a third-rate movie. It is level B if he stays like this, but level A if he evolves into level 8. The purpose of Life Mission is mutant obliteration.

They need to kill as many mutants as they can, but it would be him bringing a powerful mutant to life.

[It's a relief. The brain hasn't been completely encroached. It's a possible phenomenon because it's an Oriax that is keeping its host alive.]

If it had been a mutant that fed off of the brain like a parasite, there could be absolutely no expectations. The species' parasitic method is entirely different in the first place.

[Cha Jun Sung! The Life Mission you played has been virtualized and is not virtual! How could Overload, who caught Evil Queen, be brought down by just a level 7! Show the pride that took you to the top!]

Odin's voice flows into Cha Jun Sung's ears. He will have heard it if he is still sane. If he heard it, he needs to fight to go back.

Bang bang!

The Elder had been laying down as if it were dead, and launched a thorn at Cha Jun Sung. It is a simple attack. Even if he gets hit, he can just use his incredible stamina to recover.

The thorn gets stuck in Cha Jun Sung's shoulder. It is so thick that his arm gets cut. The headache has gone down, but he had not been able to avoid it because the host is not reacting.

The Elder is out of strength and dies as its body flops down. It is the same for the Oriax wearing Cha Jun Sung as a mask to find it difficult to do 2 things at the same time.

The Oriax's attention is divided into subduing the host's rebellion and into recovering the arm. In that gap, Cha Jun Sung's weak subconscious woke up.

"Get... out... of... my body!"

Kung!

A human's yell and mutant's roar explode from the same body. The Oriax is taken aback. The host it has absorbed has regained consciousness?

Impossible. It cannot be possible if it follows the method that its

mother showed it. The host needs to be stronger than the Oriax for this to be possible. But it does not consider this scenario. The host is just a human.

He is fairly strong, but not strong enough to reverse the current situation.

Boom boom boom!

Cha Jun Sung's body swells up again. He is almost as large as a 2-story building.

His form is that of a human's, but he looks terrifying with 4 horns pointing to the sky and a twisted face of a demon in hell.

He still has 9 eyes. Thick snake-like veins come out through his skin and writhe.

A clear form, which is not normal for the Oriax that can change its body freely. The image is reminiscent of Red Eye from Infected Tree.

This human is weird. The body has escaped control and is changing on its own. It does not listen as though mutating into a special body.

It had a strange feeling since the first time it saw Cha Jun Sung. A group of 100 humans had given off a seductive scent that it could not resist. It had seen a few good potential hosts.

They all fell short to Cha Jun Sung. It had learned that humans are not candidates for hosts, but it had gone at him without being able to resist. And then it had been surprised.

With rapid development, it had taken less than 1 hour to gain the power that its mother had boasted. It usually takes at least 5 days to stabilize, but it had been shortened by a lot.

‘Potential power.’

The Oriax borrows Cha Jun Sung’s knowledge to analyze the phenomenon. Human Cha Jun Sung’s potential power is being revealed through external interference.

To borrow human terms, it is a level 7. It is one of the top predators with its endless strength. But a potential power that can surpass that top predator. Could he be a level 8 or 9 mutant?

The Oriax cannot know that its prediction is precise. If Cha Jun Sung had been infected with A virus and had gone through development properly, he would have become a level 9. That is when he is normal. Right now? It is abnormal.

His potential power has not been exerted 100%. That is why the Oriax is holding on. It is a suicide mission for a level 7 to try and swallow a level 9.

‘I can’t quit.’

Evolution. Evolution is survival for mutants. It is a world with law of the jungle. The stronger one gets, the better it is able to protect itself against enemies.

It can become a level 8.

It can become a level 9.

It will do whatever it takes to absorb Cha Jun Sung and gain his potential power. It will become even more powerful to become a genuine predator that nothing can take on.

Ahh!

The Oriax released control of the body.

Instead, it put all of its strength into overpowering Cha Jun Sung's mental consciousness. It could lose 2 rabbits by trying to catch both. It will take care of one first.

[Level 8..... It is the Oriax's fault, but if level 8 is possible with just an indirect injection of the A virus, does that mean he is capable of reaching level 9?]

Odin spews airtight secrets that must never be leaked.

It does not matter. There is no one listening. Cha Jun Sung is not

paying attention because he is busy fighting the Oriax over control of his body.

Cha Jun Sung's body tries to move. He will destroy everything he sees now that the control has been loosened. Nothing can block him either.

Level 8. The only level 8 within a radius of hundreds of kilometers is the Blood Lord. That Blood Lord left to conquer the north. This is Cha Jun Sung's world.

[Release of block on return! Helpers in charge of Lifers who have entered Public Underground, please quickly send your Lifers back to reality!]

Odin sent a warning signal to the 99 Lifers' helpers. The Lifers need to be sent back before Cha Jun Sung goes outside and discovers them. There are a lot of important people here. They need to avoid a massacre.

\*\*\*

Beep beep!

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung has evolved into a level 8 mutant, the mission has advanced to level A. The block on returning has been released. Will you return to reality?]

“Level 8....”

“Shouldn’t he be a level 7 if he was absorbed by the Oriax? This is at the level of the Nightmares.”

“He lives up to his name even in death.”

“Shut up!”

Park Jin Hyuk is in a frenzy as he punches a wall near him. It was a fairly high stonewall, but he punctured a hole and it cracked.

“The mission is a failure. Let’s leave.”

The force members return to reality. There is no hesitation. They are strangers. Only friends are saddened by the deaths of others. Park Jin Hyuk understands with his head too, but he feels sick as he cannot understand with his heart.

“Let’s leave.”

“Koharu?”

Koharu led Park Jin Hyuk. Her face does not look good either. Kyoko and Violet are not very different either.

“You want to leave? What about Jun Sung? You don’t know what happens if we leave him in the mission?”

“I know.”

“Then?”

“What can we do in this situation? Level 8. The helpers violated the laws and released the block on returning. You know what that means.”

Lifers grew a lot over 2 years, but they still have difficulty with level 6.

Mutants get stronger by level. But starting from level 7, the mutants are monsters that can destroy entire countries. Even if there are dozens of top level 6s, they cannot beat 1 level 7. Level 8 is a Nightmare.

Parasite King and Red Eye are on the same level. Mask? Even while wearing a battlesuit, a person would be ripped apart in a second. They have no choice but to go back.

“Don’t give up. We can come back. We can come again when we’re stronger.”

“Again?”

“Jun Sung isn’t dead. The Oriax doesn’t kill its host. I don’t know why he advanced to level 8 from 7, but there’s still hope.”

Koharu pats Park Jin Hyuk's shoulder.

"Fuck, fuck. I'm going to come back no matter what. I'll get strong beyond belief and come back."

Tears fell from Park Jin Hyuk's eyes. He cannot endure this without crying. If Cha Jun Sung really has become a mutant, there will be a level A mission, won't there?

There are very few level 8 mutants. Even if individuals overlap, there won't be more than 100 of them. They will be able to find him just by reading the mission descriptions.

Kung!

As Park Jin Hyuk was returning to reality, he heard what he guessed was Cha Jun Sung's mutant roar. It is stronger than the roar he heard at first. They all hung on to their shaking consciousness as all of the force members and then Park Jin Hyuk's group left the mission.

\*\*\*

Bang bang bang!

A black demon roams the city. It is different in appearance alone from the top level mutants that are created in factories. It destroys

everything in its way, whether it is a mutant or building.

It would be easy for him to take a path going around, but he ignorantly forces everything out of the way because his sanity has gone blank white. He has grown from the original 6-7m into about 10m in height. The easiest way to distinguish an individual mutant's strength is its size. Mutants grow larger as they go up in level.

Of course this is not an absolute. Cha Jun Sung's size is at a level 5's standards, but his strength is that of level 8.

Cha Jun Sung's left arm is malformed. It has gotten more than 3 times longer and thicker. It has multiplied in size so he looks like he has a child's body with an adult's arm. He uses that to smash down a 15-floor building in front of him.

The shock from the blow goes into every corner of the apartments. The giant wreckage splits in half and shakes the ground as it falls.

Level 1 and 2 mutants had been living there, but that does not matter. Cha Jun Sung cannot be bothered to fight with the enemies inside.

Kyak!

The mutants who witnessed the destruction site, trembled in fear as they scattered and ran away. The energy that Cha Jun Sung

gives off is full of death.

A tail with hundreds of strands transformed into sharp skewers and pierced through the mutants running away. They even extended to 300m in length. He must have eyes on the back of his head because he did not let a single one get away. He repeated this action 2 or 3 times and killed more than 1000 on the spot.

Ko!

Hiding mutants either passed out or died of heart attacks from his roar. Cha Jun Sung is drunk with the top priority of mutant instincts, the instinct to slaughter. He felt alive while killing.

Boom boom boom!

Cha Jun Sung swept through the dense areas of the apartments with each strand of his tail, moving as though alive. They changed into sharp knives or blunt bats, devastating the area.

Boom!

Once he destroys an area for no reason, he moves on. A decided place? He does not have any. He just goes where he wanders in.

Kung?

Cha Jun Sung's eyes looks dozens of kilometers away, all in

different directions. Something is idling nearby. His senses pick up movement, but it is pretty fast. It does not stay in one place, and keeps moving back and forth.

# Chapter 146

---

A mutant as skinny as a skeleton with muscles split like thread, is hanging from a spire. It looks really odd. Its most prominent characteristic is a red bead flapping on its chest. If Lifer Cha Jun Sung had seen it, he would have resented the heavens.

Level 7 Red Heart.

Of the mutants that use their bodies, it enjoys speed. It goes after its opponent with its sleek form. The red bead is its heart, which protrudes from its body as it evolves.

That is the source of its speed. The heart also functions as the lungs. It helps with control so that it does not run out of breath no matter how much it moves around.

Kyak!

‘Leave. This is my turf.’

The Red Heart scratches the spire with its fingernails. It is a warning it is sending to Cha Jun Sung.

It is telling him that their instincts are similar at the least or that it is stronger.

But its pride will not allow it to surrender when it is a level 7 that

has been reigning this area for a long time. It has protected the area from all enemies.

Cha Jun Sung loosens up his muscles. His sanity is paralyzed, but the Red Heart is different from the trash he has killed until now and will be fun for him.

His combative spirit boils. His appetite also soars. He wants to rip that heart off and fill his stomach with it. It looks delicious.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung spurred off of the spot. Red Heart decided to use his big size as a tactic. It is too much to go at him head on.

The Red Heart tried to injure him by going around him. There is no use. Rapid regeneration makes him recover within seconds. It really is fast.

All he can see with 9 eyes is a hazy image. The Red Heart surpasses him in speed alone. But it cannot attack its opponent because it only runs away.

Cha Jun Sung's body turns. If he cannot hit it, he will attack the whole area. He will not leave even the slightest gap open. It can only get away if it wants to stay alive.

His tail changed like a thin sword and extended to its limit. The already scorched apartment complex just blew powder under that

attack.

The Red Heart got through the storm, and barely escaped the area of attack. If it had been a little later, it would have been sucked in among that dust.

Like its left foot.

Its ankle gets cut off whole. Blood soaks the ground. It lost balance, but did not panic. This will just regenerate. Rapid regeneration is not an ability unique to level 8 and 9 mutants like Cha Jun Sung. It is an ability given to a few special low level 7s as well.

Bang!

It was just one to two seconds. The progression from start to finish was short. Cha Jun Sung did not miss his chance while the Red Heart had lost mobility.

The 10m height shrinks down to 2m. He had gone from the size of a building to that of a human. On behalf of this change, he became as fast as the Red Heart. There is distance between them, so it will either regenerate and run away or reduce the chances to attack if he does not increase his speed. This is a result of Cha Jun Sung's combat experience and the Oriax's ability to transform.

Kyak!

The Red Heart erects its nails. It can read Cha Jun Sung's movements with its eyes, but its body does not follow suit. If it cannot avoid him, it will counter. It has no choice but to ignore the level and difference in militant characteristics, and go into a second melee. The Red Heart is extremely thin and weak.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung enlarged his fist, and hit the Red Heart. A power of hundreds of tons breaks all of the bones in its body and crushes its skin.

The Red Heart bounces off of the ground as though playing in water. It did not die. A level 7's vitality is beyond imagination.

He walks in a relaxed manner. He attacks everywhere and damages its heart.

Quick regeneration is not universal, so the nucleus and source are damaged and cannot recover smoothly as if its arms and legs have been cut off. He has won.

Cha Jun Sung stepped on the Red Heart's stomach and picked off its heart. His finger had changed into a hook and broke it off cleanly.

The blood vessel comes trailing out with it. He cut the vessel with his nail, and chews on the heart. As soon as the heart is destroyed, the Red Heart's eyes roll back. It really is delicious.

Ha ha ha ha!

This is somewhere in Europe. Somewhere in Firenze, Italy to be more precise. The large city that the Red Heart ruled is now Cha Jun Sung's.

xxx

England, Buckingham Palace.

This palace, constructed by Duke Buckingham through Sheffield in the year 1703, became a royal building and became the king's residence at some point.

It is a symbol of England and part of the royal family's history. But even this place that was expected to be fated with the English royal family forever, became a mess when the A virus swept across the planet.

There is just one character from the royal family living in the Buckingham Palace right now, and everything including that one character is a mutant wearing the mask of humans.

A lot of time has passed since this happened. But what use is there to consider such things when the world has come to its end? It is all futile.

\*\*\*

“Apparently there’s detection of a new entity in the southwest, near Italy.”

“Southwest?”

Four beings are gathered in the Buckingham Palace’s private royal conference hall. They are similar in form to humans, but they are just similar, not humans.

A man covered in smooth red fur, speaks on behalf of everyone. It is highest in rank of the four, and it is accordingly strong.

They have received information on a mutant destroying Italy recently.

There is a means of contact among mutants. Though humans’ technology was lost with the downfall of science, they maintained living conditions for useful humans and even received a little help.

“It must have woken up not too long ago, because it’s going around smashing everything it comes across.”

In reality, they really do not know how long it has been since the mutant woke up. Generally, ultra high level mutants beyond level 7 have a tendency to make a fuss for a few months after initial awakening.

“Italy.....”

“Hee hee! Medusa, it’s your area.”

A bald man with no nose, ears, or mouth and just a big eyeball, asks a young woman with a lot of snakes on top of her head.

They look like they are just sitting on her head at a glance, but they are her hair. Each one is alive and are her treasures as they each have deadly poison.

Medusa. She is a level 8 mutant ruling southern Europe, areas like Portugal, Spain, Italy, and Greece.

It is under her jurisdiction because an unidentified mutant is creating chaos in Italy.

“Catch it and bring it to me.”

“Alone?”

Medusa frowned at the leader’s words. If it is to the point for him to gather everyone together to say this, it must be a mutant at their level that has completed evolution. Capture and not killing. Does he not know how difficult it is to repress an opponent? There needs to be additional help for this.

“Go with Beholder.”

“Hee hee! Going with Medusa? That makes me happy.”

“Ugh!”

Beholder, the bald man, drools. Medusa is uncomfortable and looks away.

“Can’t I go with someone else?”

Medusa looks at a giant that has been silent in a corner seat. It only listens with its arms crossed. It has a reticent personality. It does not get involved unless it is necessary.

“Titan needs to go north.”

“Hedgehog is still alive?”

“Its army is impressive. It came fully prepared. Kimeira is struggling.”

Expressed as a struggle, it is actually a siege of pushing and pulling between matched powers. The Hedgehog they are discussing is the Blood Lord.

It is determined because of a loss in the past and has come back

stronger, with more power.

“They’ll be dead if Titan is going.”

“We’re not killing it, but bringing it back. Just like the new guy you need to capture.”

“Huh?”

“It’s what the Empress desires. There needs to be a reinforcement of power to widen her influence.”

“Because of Asia?”

“That’s only a part of it. It’s because of Asia like you said, and Africa.”

Asia’s Red Eye recruited a new face. Black Horse is not interested in battles over zones, but he is different. He is very aggressive and active.

Of the six continents, Asia has the most land and Black Horse is the most powerful of the six Disasters. It is lacking underlings. As long as that aspect is satisfied, everything like individual strength, area, and influence will be complete.

“Africa.....”

“He is an ally, but he isn’t trustworthy. We never know when he’ll betray us.”

Medusa recalled Africa’s Disaster, that she came across a few years ago. It is sneaky and cunning. She gets goosebumps just thinking about it.

“We’re equal with Africa if we capture Hedgehog and Italy’s crazy guy. The Empress has a lot of expectations riding on this. Give it your all.”

“When do we leave?”

“It’s better to get moving since it’s pretty far away. Go immediately.”

Medusa stood up. Beholder smiled as he followed behind her. The 4 of them, 5 including Kimeira in Latvia are equal in level, but the leader, Heat Wave Inferno, is special.

He is a powerful mutant that the Empress personally appointed. He can take on any two of them at the same time.

That is why they follow his orders. There is no reluctance. They can fight and win if they think it is unjust.

“Titan, I’ll leave it to you. Bring Blood Lord to the Empress. It’ll get over its arrogance and yield if it sees a mutant more powerful than itself.”

Blood Lord is just interfering here and there because of its arrogance. If it encounters a true predator, it will surrender because it does not want to die.

“Alright.”

Boom!

Titan also left to complete the assigned mission. Inferno, left behind alone, also thought intently and then disappeared like a ghost.

# **Volume 06**

# Chapter 147

---

Italy is on the verge of chaos. There were already clear signs of destruction as the world collapsed, but this is confined to humans.

It was a time for mutants to lay down a foundation just as humans developed from ancient times. And who knows? They might rebuild the world.

In this flow, mutants in Italy were living peacefully in their respective areas. That was until a demon full of madness appeared.

The demon that appeared out of nowhere destroyed, killed, and ate everything that was in its way. It was only quiet while resting.

It only took a few days for it to destroy an entire area.

It ran amuck like this for several months. It did not tire and only became worse. It is basically a natural disaster.

Beholder rolls a yellow eyeball. In front of him is the wreckage of what looks like a skyscraper.

“The first impact was the big hit, but the attack was divided as it walked through it.”

“Mutating?”

“This isn’t just a normal mutation. It’s a whole body mutation. Hee hee!”

Beholder responded to Medusa’s question with confidence. His eye has the ability to see what other beings cannot.

He figured out that Cha Jun Sung is a mutant that can change at will just by looking at the wreckage, and that he can change his entire body.

The ability to mutate is an ability that varies in value by the beholder, whether it is seen as common or valuable. Nothing can imitate it unless it is at the highest level.

There is a difference between whole body and body part mutation. One can change the entire body at will in the former, and the latter means that only parts – like the arms or legs – are changeable.

“How many mutants are there that can do this?”

“There can’t be over 5 in all of levels 1 through 9. And since it’s a level 8, there can only be Red Eye. I want to hurry up and meet him so I can see what he’s like.”

“Just find him.”

“Hmph!”

Beholder raised his hand. Hundreds of eyes the size of millets popped up.

They split into hundreds and thousands like cell division to be implemented in various ways like searching for a target or surveillance.

“Spread out. Relay everything you see to me.”

Beholder shook his hand. The eyes that had been bunched together flew with the wind. They have a kind of telepathic ability that works within a radius of hundreds of kilometers.

They know what lives in Italy, so it will only be a matter of time before they find what they are looking for.

\*\*\*

A sharp blade goes through a tunnel rat's chin. There were a lot but he killed all of them. There is no fun in killing them because they are low level.

Cha Jun Sung's tail wraps around a tunnel rat and absorbs it whole.

Though he gained a stamina that does not tire when he became a mutant, it is not infinite. Since he is a living being, he needs to

supplement as much as he uses. He fortunately has not faced a strong enemy yet, so he has not been wounded yet.

If he gets wounded, the balance gets out of hand because he needs to pay attention to recovering the injury in addition to physical stamina. It is difficult to expect smooth flow.

Cha Jun Sung likes the tunnel. Not the tunnel itself but the environment – he likes the dark. This is in the Oriax's nature, not his own.

Darkness is black like the Oriax. This environment provides him with a protective color without having to do anything, so this feels like his nest.

Cha Jun Sung laid down anywhere and closed his eyes. He does not run around like crazy all 365 days of the year. The only time he is quiet is when he is resting.

Though it looks like he is sleeping but is not very different from usual because he leaves his senses open to capture external dynamics. It is better to say he is recovering psychological stability.

Wing wing!

Several hours after Cha Jun Sung stops moving in the cave.

He can hear the weak sound of bees flying around. It is

bothersome and he pretends he does not hear it. It is because he does not feel hostility. He just thought of them as annoying bugs that would wander around and then leave.

But they stopped in one place at one point and floated. Cha Jun Sung left them to stay floating or wander, but suddenly felt unpleasant. It feels like those bugs are watching him.

He compresses a finger to be thin like a needle and stabs the bug to bring it in front of him. He wants to see closely what kind of bug it is.

An eye? Black dots are all over a hazy gray marble embedded with veins. These dots blink as though they are alive.

Cha Jun Sung swells the needle like a chestnut bur and makes dozens of holes in the eye. By instinct, it does not feel like an autonomous creature. The inside becomes quiet. This did not happen again even though time passed. Cha Jun Sung is satisfied and rests in peace and comfort.

\*\*\*

Beholder focused while standing in one place and laughed as he opened his eye.

A few weeks had passed since he arrived in Italy. He searched for the new mutant Inferno mentioned in that time, and discovered it not too long ago.

“Kik kik! It is Italy, but it’s pretty far.”

“Where?”

“Rome.”

Cha Jun Sung had gone south from Firenze to Rome. It had not been easy to get a sensory circle of the country even though Beholder had sent his eyes. Doing the country in its entirety was impossible, so he had to separate it into parts.

Beholder frowned. He knows why and the irrelevant Medusa has a rough guess.

“The nerve! He killed my eye!”

“It should have fallen back if it saw him.”

He felt the pain that the piece of him felt from Cha Jun Sung. They have an indirect connection, so the main body is affected when an issue arises with a part.

“I don’t know. I’ll need to scold it until it’s right before death!”

Beholder has taken a hit, but he is being sensitive with something that is not a big deal. Medusa left him alone because she knows his personality well.

From her point of view, Beholder is like a child. He has uncensored emotional ups and downs. He is good-natured at times and evil at others.

His real self of those.....

‘SE Beholder.’

He is sneaky and evil. The way that mutants think cannot be the same as with humans because their law and order is the struggle for survival. They think nothing of others' lives and do whatever it takes to achieve what they want. In these ways, Medusa and Beholder are the same.

“What does it look like?”

“Look like? Like this?”

Tentacles as long and thin as hair draw what Cha Jun Sung looks like on the concrete ground. It is smooth like a knife cutting through tofu. There is no way to be sure of its behavior, but it is a level 8 in ability.

Medusa has a strange expression after seeing Beholder's drawing. Because it is drawn well? No. The image in the drawing is strangely familiar.

“Red Eye?”

“What are you talking about?”

“I guess you won’t know since you’ve never seen him. This drawing looks like Asia’s Red Eye. There are differences in the small details... but they’re the same overall.”

“Kik kik! Then is he a brother or something?”

“No. He would be the Black Demon’s son if he’s a brother, but he wouldn’t be here.”

Black Demon lives in Korea. Could it have come from Asia to Europe to run wild in Italy? That is nonsense. Say that by chance, it came all the way here. Would Black Demon let his son run wild? If he left him alone, Red Eye would get involved.

They only look alike on the outside, and the new mutant is an entirely different creature from them.

“It’ll take a few days.”

“Hurry hurry!”

Beholder urges Medusa. He gathered and sent his eyes in a line to the place where he discovered Cha Jun Sung. With this, there is no reason for them to stray off path.

# Chapter 148

---

Cha Jun Sung roars with his chest puffed out in the middle of the city. How much time has passed since this crazed version of himself has lived inside the mission?

He will not know even if he comes to his senses. He needs to meet another Lifer or his PDA in order to regain his lost time or go back to reality. If he continues in this state, it is questionable whether that day will ever come.

If he meets Lifers like this, he will annihilate all of them, much less hold a conversation. Is there really a way to go back?

“Hee hee! It’s him!”

“That’s the right level. We need to fight to know, but its physical ability should be superior.”

On top of a tall building.

Beholder and Medusa exchange their impressions of seeing Cha Jun Sung with their own eyes. Judging only by physical ability, they will be overpowered.

Beholder’s fighting power is a low level 7. Instead, he has various abilities and the one he uses most is mind control.

He can even take on two level 7s. This envious ability is something that all Lifers and mutants are averse to in all ways.

“Will it be possible to talk to him?”

“Kik! He seems to have gone a bit severely insane, but I’ll try.”

He is not saying that he will face him. Beholder will go inside Cha Jun Sung through mind control to talk to his sane thoughts.

Medusa waits next to him. If something goes wrong and he fails, she needs to interfere and block Cha Jun Sung. It is good if everything goes smoothly, but there is nothing to lose in this going badly.

She licks her lips with her long tongue. The snakes on her head also flick their tongues. She likes fighting. She likes the negative atmosphere of it even more. She wants to rip his skin and see his tender insides. Like minds gather together. Like Beholder, Medusa is not completely sane.

‘Huh?’

While Medusa was lost in her imagination, Beholder used telepathy to go into Cha Jun Sung’s mind. As they are at the same level, his defenses are strong.

But he falls a little short of those at the same level. If they are 10, he is at around 7 or 8? He did not think much about it because it is

not important.

[Get out of my body!]

[This is mine.]

[Huh? There's one body, but 2 minds? Who's who?]

There are 2 minds. The 2 are fighting over one body.

He has gone into the minds of countless humans and mutants, but this is the first time he is seeing something like this. Beholder became curious.

[Hee hee! Are there 3 if I get in there too? If I win, is this mine?]

He cannot go into the body, but he would be able to control it like a limb. This is normally not something he is able to do, but it might be possible when it is in such a messy state.

[Hey hey.]

There is no response even if he speaks. Is this the reason why the mental defenses were low?

[Ki ki ki!]

Beholder instinctively goes into the mind. They are so busy fighting among themselves that they do not realize an enemy has intruded. This is probably what fish in troubled waters means.

He went into various places and gained information on the new mutant and Cha Jun Sung. The more he learns, the more surprising it is and the more mysterious Cha Jun Sung becomes.

[How strange for an Oriax to take a human as its host. Huh? There are levels to us, too. What level am I? Let's see..... Level 8?]

[Life Mission? Game? Earth? Helper? This human killed Evil Queen? The whore in South America? He met Red Eye inside a mission?]

[We're inside a mission right now? It isn't Earth? I don't understand.]

Beholder is confused. Is this all true? He cannot describe the mental state of this human, Cha Jun Sung.

He moved past this question however. He can do the understanding later. First, he needs to kick the fighting minds out and make this body into one of his limbs. He could become at the same level as Inferno if he makes a level 8 into his limb.

[But what's that?]

While he was slowly getting involved in the fight, something

caught Beholder's attention. It does not have a clear form like other information. It is transparent and hazy.

This means that this is something Cha Jun Sung does not know either. Beholder thought.

'Should I open it?'

He can do it after taking over the mind, but he is curious. Beholder cannot restrain himself when he is curious. Looking at the situation, there should be no problem from opening it.

Beholder opens the hazy thing. Is it something fun? He opened it with great expectations, but it did not meet up to his hopes.

[Ugh!]

His mind is being pushed out. He is forced out by a power that came in like a typhoon. He would not have opened it if he knew that this would happen.

"It didn't go well?"

"Huh? Hee hee! He's just crazy. He's a crazy bastard. Let's knock him out and take him."

Beholder hid his mistake. She cannot know unless he says it himself anyway. And all they have to do is take him back.

Kung!

Cha Jun Sung's body twists. There is no big change externally, but he seems to have become more refined. He had already been perfect physically, but he is now transcending that perfection.

“What did you touch in there?”

Medusa gulped as she saw the goosebumps forming on her skin. She is feeling fear for the 3rd time in her life. The first was when she saw the Empress for the first time, and the 2nd was when she saw Africa's disaster.

Cha Jun Sung finishes changing and breathes out. Black smoke comes out when he breathes.

“Black... Smoke?”

“This doesn't make sense! How could he be here? I checked!”

All top level mutants that succeeded in evolution as individuals have a characteristic that distinguishes them from other mutants.

Beholder is his body and Medusa is the snakes on her head. They do not know how Cha Jun Sung is breathing black smoke, but that is the trademark of Black Demon Aduroque, who is dominating Asia.

Cha Jun Sung's eye goes around and finds the exact location of Beholder and Medusa's hiding place. He still feels the madness, but it feels stable.

“Who... it is?”

Cha Jun Sung has not been able to use human language since he lost his sanity. But now, he is unsteadily asking about the identity of the foreign beings. It is a great development.

“Fall back and support me.”

“I promise! He isn't Black Demon!”

Medusa had been in human form but woke up her original state and released her strength. Her slender feminine body becomes covered in muscles and she grows to be 5 meters.

Other than the fact that her hair is made of snakes, she is still beautiful, but her legs combined and changed into a snake's tail.

Medusa pulled her neck bone with strength. Then, a spear made of bone 8 meters long was curiously formed. A clear liquid dripped from the handle, and it is poison that could kill a level 6 mutant just by touching it.

Cha Jun Sung had made his way to Medusa, made both of his

arms into blades, and brought them down.

Medusa was going to avoid it, but blocked it thinking that they should meet for the first time.

Boom!

Though they are mutants, it must still be flesh colliding, but the sound it made is comparable to a mission exploding. The shockwave generated from the center of the crash shattered all of the windows within radius.

Bang bang bang!

Cha Jun Sung had leveraged himself to float in the air but bounced back because of the shock, and Medusa plummeted down when the ground collapsed under her.

When there isn't much of a difference in ability in a fight, it is better to be attacking from above than it is to be below. Medusa reaped damages in this crash, but this is it. She is alive. She came out with not even a scratch.

# Chapter 149

---

As Cha Jun Sung flung out, his hand split vertically and the ends connected.

The shape is weird but looking closely, it is a bow. The flesh that rides up the bowstep makes an arrow. It is the size of a spear.

The arrow is heading for Beholder. Cha Jun Sung instinctively noticed that he lacks in combat compared to Medusa.

But another instinct told him that Beholder is more dangerous than Medusa. It is best to get rid of an enemy that holds its weapon within.

Beholder's eye glared and the atmosphere became heavy. It felt like the speed of the arrow slowed down for a moment and it stopped for a blink of an eye. Is his super power psychokinesis? Beholder took this time to quickly avoid the arrow, and Medusa also awakened her body.

The eye grows larger. It grew so big that it covered the upper and lower body whole. It is an extension of the millet that Cha Jun Sung killed in the cave. The difference is the coat covered in tentacles that protects the eye.

He does not know its usage, but it seems to be a part that assists the super powers or takes over attack or defense. If not, it is too unprotected.

Bang!

The arrow goes through buildings and disappears far away. Windows and walls could not stand against it. There is no way of knowing how far it'll go. That is not important to the monsters watching this battlefield.

Cha Jun Sung lands on the ground. He leapt the height of a skyscraper but as long as he does not have wings and there is gravity, there is bound to be restrictions.

"It would have been good if we had been able to talk..... I'll take care of you just before you're dead."

Reptile pupils getting closer, Medusa welcomes Cha Jun Sung when he comes down. She strikes out with the bone spear as though she had been waiting.

It feels like she only slashed it once, but there were 100 flashes of light. As fast as the speed of light, it is a spear with ultra strength that brings on a visual illusion.

The bone spear grazes flesh. The flesh rips and as soon as blood splatters, it is healed. Cha Jun Sung has not been wounded since fighting the Red Heart. The Red Heart lost because of the wide range, but Medusa pushed forward to force Cha Jun Sung to stay on the defense.

There are times when success and failure are distinguished by who grabs the advantage first. If Cha Jun Sung had been calm and logical, he would not have handed it over so easily. This is also what Medusa had intended.

Unlike Cha Jun Sung, she is able to determine what is advantageous and what is a disadvantage. She did not come here to play around.

She is supposed to be capturing Cha Jun Sung with Beholder, but he is a strong mutant and the smallest mistake could cost her her life.

With sealed arms and legs, Cha Jun Sung swung his tails. He attacked Medusa's defense with an extended blade in overwhelming momentum.

“I was wondering when he would use his tail.”

Medusa retreated and turned the bone spear with both hands. The rotational force created an 8 meter diameter shield that flung the tails away.

It felt like the victory would change because the battle was reversed, but Cha Jun Sung's movement stopped short and started again like before. It is Beholder's doing.

“Medusa, tell me honestly! You can't capture him without me, can you?”

Beholder chirps and comes down from the top of the building. Though he is in the air, it is natural as though he has a parachute because he is adjusting his weight with torsion.

“Of course. No matter how crazy he is, we’re at the same level. There’s only a destructive instinct left over if that happens, so distractions disappear. It could be even more tricky.”

He only goes for the enemy’s life without looking after his own body. She might be able to kill him, but capture is impossible.

9 eyes watch the enemies ahead. It may be because Beholder already went in and out of his mind before, so he is still strong but he has become a little weaker. This enemy is stronger than any mutant he has fought until now.

Cha Jun Sung felt this by instinct. And there is not just one but two.

If they were fighting physically, he would fight without considering anything else, but one takes him on directly and the other supports. That divided his attention. Especially that eye. It ties his body down or slows time down in crucial moments.

It is just a matter of becoming exposed when attacking, but it is suffering an unfair strike if getting caught on his ability against defense.

“He’s looking at you.”

Beholder slowly goes behind Medusa. All 9 eyes are looking at him. He is first on the kill list.

“How far can you restrict him?”

“His repulsive force is stronger than Inferno’s. It’s fine for short moments but I would only be able to do 20% if I need to maintain it for the duration of a battle.”

20% is an amount that can be decreased, so the repulsive force gets more severe as the opponent is stronger. In other words, Cha Jun Sung is above Inferno.

‘If that guy comes to his senses.....’

It would not be at the level of a disaster. The disasters that Medusa has seen are the one in Africa and the Empress. She is strong, but she cannot surpass them.

Among the subordinate nightmares however, she considers herself one of the strongest. Like the father, the child is strong.

That Black Demon is showing strength that is comparable to Red Eye’s. If she captures him, helps him to gain his sanity, and brings him in as an ally, he will become a reliable pillar along with Blood Lord.

“20%..... Then what about weakening him and going back into his mind?”

“We’d have to try it out.”

Beholder did not speak negatively. He does not know because they have not tried it. It could work and it could not.

But looking at Medusa’s expression, he needs to make even the impossible happen.

\*\*\*

Bang bang bang bang!

An arm that has been changed into a huge sword slashes through the air. Medusa did not run away, and jockeyed each with her spear.

The black smoke that came out whenever he breathed had decreased by a little. The source is obvious. Medusa realized that it is related to Cha Jun Sung’s strength, or stamina, but that does not change anything.

He is still vigorous with just 80%. Regretfully, this is the same for the enemy.

The sword hits the ground. It was not as though this caused an earthquake or a split, but that force tickled Medusa's skin.

Medusa spun around and whipped her 15 meter tail to hit Cha Jun Sung's cheek.

Cha Jun Sung grabs his cheek in pain. His 9 eyes are also on his cheeks, so this is the same as hitting his eyes. His sight becomes distorted and paralyzed. Medusa is becoming blurred.

Medusa's arm bends abnormally. It is a screw attack that adds to the rotational force of a straight edge. It is the best to penetrate with.

That attack goes for Cha Jun Sung's stomach. It digs in through flesh and muscle that is harder than metal. It turns his organs and twists them. This is a wound that would have killed humans and average mutants 100 times over regardless of regeneration, but Cha Jun Sung endured it.

“Die.....”

“Did he take the hit on purpose? I guess he's not as crazy as I thought.”

His fist becomes round and grows thorns. It looks exactly like an iron mace. His shoulder muscles writhe and bullets are fired. They are aimed at Medusa's head. It has the power to blow something up.

Medusa left the bone spear and raised both her arms. The opponent is trying to give his flesh and take her bones. They are too close. She will just take a hit this time.

She went flying like a bomb fragment from the incoming strength. She looked wild sweeping backwards across the ground, but it was like looking at a broom.

“Ugh! My arms.....”

The flesh that covered both of her arms are crushed and the bones are shattered. The way it hangs is so ghastly that it would have been better to cut it off.

“Beholder, what about entering?”

“Kihit! I can’t go in. His mental defenses are completely different from before. I don’t think it’ll be possible until the pressure applied to him is gone.”

She takes out her bone spear, and Cha Jun Sung approaches her. As she is also a level 8, she heals both of her arms quickly.

Cha Jun Sung had been elated until now, and suddenly kneels. Is it because of Beholder? No.

“Seems like the special drug is finally kicking in. It was hard to

adjust the dosage.”

Medusa draws her spear. She can take out a spear from her neck bone whenever she consumes nutrients, but there is a clear liquid at the end.

“With your strength, you can withstand my poison even if it isn’t diluted, but it’ll be a different situation from a wound or being half-dead. There’s the hardship we went through of coming all the way here, but wouldn’t it be a waste if one of us dies? Whether that’s you, me, or that guy.”

# Chapter 150

---

She diluted it to 60%. Even this much is a lethal dose that could kill a level 6 within 10 minutes. Cha Jun Sung fought for several hours after taking thousands of rounds.

He does not die or show abnormal symptoms even with that, and has heavy movement with paralysis like Beholder's psychokinesis.

"This is it. Do it again. Talk or suppress – do whatever you need to create the conditions we need to capture him. That's the easiest way if we're going to take him to the palace."

"Kikik! Yeah!"

Titan would have been able to bind him up, but this is not something that they can do. And it is not like they can take him after tying his arms and legs up. It is okay even if there is not a long period of time that they can control Cha Jun Sung's mind. If they buy just a few days of time, they are prepared to make the most of it.

[It works!]

Beholder cheers. He succeeded in re-entry. Cha Jun Sung is physically exhausted from fighting Medusa under all sorts of restrictions, and he is experiencing hallucinations because of the poison. His mental defenses are bound to collapse.

[You're the guy who came in before. Get out.]

[Me?]

[Yeah.]

[Did you go back to normal? It was a mess with two of you fighting before.]

[A part became stable because you were digging around. But that doesn't mean I've gone back to my original self. It's just a part. I'll say it again. Get out.]

[I can't do that. I have to take you to her Majesty. Do you know how far I walked? It was such a bother! Become one of us.]

[Where are we?]

It is unfair. Beholder can see into Cha Jun Sung's mind, but Cha Jun Sung cannot see into Beholder's. It is not a matter of who is stronger, but a difference in ability.

[Italy's capital, Rome. You don't remember anything? Not even who you are?]

[Me? I'm Cha Jun Sung. Didn't you already see that?]

[I did, but it's hard to believe. Hey! Are you really a human? We can communicate well. If all goes well, we won't even need to fight.]

Beholder thought that the situation was going in their favor. It feels like if he keeps up a good atmosphere and sweet talks Cha Jun Sung, the battle could end now.

[Italy... Is this Europe? When you say Majesty, do you mean White Queen Lobelira?]

[You know her Majesty? Did you really kill that whore, Evil Queen?]

[If you don't differentiate between reality and virtual... then, I did kill her. By the way, can I ask you for a favor?]

[What is it?]

[Can you help me so my mind can control my body? I'll become one of you if you do that for me. I can't do anything in this state.]

[Will it work if I separate the Oriax? I don't think I can do it for very long.]

[A few days would be fine. Even a day.]

[Fine! I'll try it!]

The situation is unraveling well. Beholder is happy that he completed his mission, and helped Cha Jun Sung's mind to push the Oriax.

There is nothing to lose in gaining points with someone they will become colleagues with. But is there really nothing to lose? Pushing too far ahead without thinking is bound to lead to mistakes.

Beholder can figure out what Cha Jun Sung is thinking if he has the mind to find out. When the opponent became submissive, he skipped steps with the thought that he just needed to end it quickly. There is no way to know what might result from that.

An unreactive body on its knees. While Beholder was talking to Cha Jun Sung's mind, his body did not move as though it were a machine with its engine turned off.

Medusa released the hallucinations. A tremendous amount of energy is consumed to maintain the hallucinations. She needs to rest in order to use it sparingly.

She wants to eat something, but this is a battlefield with level 8 monsters. Unless they are crazy, lower level mutants would not remain here. Every living creature will have run away as soon as Cha Jun Sung roared and revealed his presence.

If she cannot supplement her strength with nutrients, calming her short breath will provide her with conditions to fight in.

“Ha? All wounds healed in the time it would take for a cup of coffee to go cold? He didn’t absorb my poison as nutrients, did he? This is a problem if that’s true.”

Even if the poison has been diluted to 60%, it is harmful to the body unless it is a mutant that can handle poison. Though mutants have high detoxification capabilities and they are not affected, poison is still poison. It becomes an unnecessary attack.

It is easier to send it out than consume nutrients inside and detoxify. Then it is one of two cases. He either sucked up the venom to use as nutrients as Medusa said, or he stupidly did not expel the poison and is detoxifying from the inside.

“This won’t do. My dear children, go hunt for mommy.”

Kyak!

Medusa stroked the snakes camouflaged as hair and they fell out to combine into one and become a venomous snake 3 to 4 meters long.

She had not shown this ability while fighting with Cha Jun Sung. She has only ever shown this ability once in her life! It was in a battle of order with Inferno.

The colorful snake grows farther from Medusa’s view. Its writhing is like that of a sneak, but it is as fast as an arrow. Medusa

sent her children because she cannot leave. She needs to guard Cha Jun Sung because there is no way of knowing what might change.

The snake must not be underestimated because it is small. It is still a level 6. If bitten by its fangs, a Lifer who has gone through the 4th stage of body modifications would not last 10 seconds.

Grey hair grows where the snakes had been. It is the hair she had when she had been human.

Cha Jun Sung did not show change even after several hours. He is still on his knees. Medusa relaxed and waited.

“Kihit!”

Beholder approaches from outside the battlefield. It is over. She will need to hear from him to know whether it was a failure or success, but it looks like a success.

“You’re here. How is he?”

“Kikik! Fortunately, we could communicate! His mind is split into two, but one side is for us. I helped that side to push down the other.”

“For how long? When will he wake up?”

“2 days minimum, 3 days at most? It’ll get longer and longer if I

hold him. I'm sure he'll be completely eaten later. 5 minutes is enough to wake up."

Medusa's expression becomes light. It took a few months to search for him. She relaxed and put her heart to rest.

Twitch.

"He's moving."

"Hee hee!"

A weak vibration, Cha Jun Sung's body is reacting. It started from his fingers and toes, spread to his elbows and knees, and ended with his body and neck.

9 eyes open. There was no difference in his intensity, but he was not full of ferocity and savagery as he had been before.

Cha Jun Sung put his palm with sharp nails on concrete. When he squeezed with strength, the stone floor shaves off under the gruesome grip. He ground the stone fragments he held in his hand and let the powder fly with the wind.

Boom!

His knees straighten. The world looks small when looking at it from 10 meters in the air. Why is it so small? It is a toy? His senses

that are amplified by the hundreds of what he had as a human tell him that he has become a being that exceeded limits.

“Like this?”

Cha Jun Sung changes his body. He has never changed the way he wanted to with a sane mind, but he is used to it. His body must remember.

“How do you feel?”

“I feel?”

A sound from ahead. Medusa in her sleeping state and Beholder in his awakened state. He cannot think of the word to express himself.

“It’ll be strange for now. You’ve abandoned yourself and evolved into a new being. But that ends soon, too. Adapting is quick.”

They understand Cha Jun Sung. There is no mutant that feels natural from the beginning after recovering normality. This was the same for Medusa and Beholder. How could they be natural when they do not know how anything worked out?

“The White Queen wants me?”

“You know her Majesty?”

“We’ve never met. I just know that she’s looking for me from my conversation with Beholder, but I don’t understand. Why is she trying to meet me?”

“Why else? She wants to gain an upper hand in the fight against the disasters.”

“The 6 disasters.....”

# Chapter 151

---

“Ha? You know that there are 6? You were just a human before evolution, but you know a lot about the mutant world. Who did you serve?”

“Uh... Medusa, it's complicated. We need to explain to everyone including the White Queen. I can't really believe it either. Wait a bit.”

Beholder is wondering how to unravel this in his words. It would be good if Cha Jun Sung himself interfered, but he will have a role distributed to him as well.

‘White Queen....’

She is one of only two female mutants out of the 6 disasters. She is the empress of Europe, with everything from her looks to her fighting style opposite to the Evil Queen.

“I'll tell you our situation briefly. We partnered with Africa.”

“Africa? Lies and betrayal, I can't trust him when he ostracizes others. You never know when he might stab your back. Someone like Oceania would be better.”

“We thought of that too, but we excluded him because it's hard for him to come out on land. At any rate, we need strong allies in order to keep Africa in check.”

Cha Jun Sung listened to what Medusa was saying. He lost his PDA and became a mutant. Whatever happens, he needs to gain more information about this place.

“Am I the only recruit?”

“The Blood Lord in Latvia is also a potential recruit.”

“The Blood Lord!”

Cha Jun Sung raised his voice. He recalls the description for the Public Underground mission.

The Blood Lord, who went north on an expeditionary force! He left the Public Underground so if he traces his steps back, he might be able to find the path he needs to go back to.

“What do you have to do with him?”

“Where does the Blood Lord live?”

“Somewhere in Czechoslovakia.”

Medusa does not know in detail either. She can find out if she wants to, but there is no reason for her to do that. She knew that he would move on his own.

‘Czechoslovakia..... It might be possible.’

The country’s total area is smaller than that of Korea. The future looked bleak, but Cha Jun Sung is optimistic. He thinks that he will have to dig around for several months to find what he needs to know.

“My baby is back.”

Cha Jun Sung’s senses identify the living creature approaching them and its smell. It is the venomous snake that Medusa sent out. It has gotten bigger. It was 3 or 4 meters before and is now 7 or 8. This growth is evidence of how much it has gained in nutrients.

Cha Jun Sung’s eyes narrow. If that snake goes back to Medusa, she will probably recover her strength. What about himself? He is tired, but he can still fight. He will not follow them. He loses his freedom the moment he meets the White Queen. To reverse the situation and win his freedom after meeting the White Queen? How is he supposed to do that against a level 9?

There is no way he can win. A 6th sense awakened in him after he became a mutant. He cannot express it, but he knows that he is incomplete. If he thanks them for the explanation and says that they should go their separate ways, will they let him go without a fight? They will take him by force if they have to.

‘On 3. I only have one chance.’

He pretended to stretch his body and prepared to reach the optimal point to attack in the shortest time possible. Medusa and Beholder were not suspicious.

Both arms grow larger and Cha Jun Sung changes into a monster. The back of his hands become faces and his nails, teeth. Two wolves went for Medusa's snake and Beholder. This is not the end of his attack. Cha Jun Sung's tails become one giant sword and slash down on Medusa. The attack takes advantage of their relaxed states.

Beholder is surprised and swings hundreds of tentacles around. He is not a combative type, but he is still a level 8. He has the defensive means to protect his own body. But Cha Jun Sung's attack was such a surprise that Beholder was not able to block it completely.

The beast cut the tentacles off with a blade and tried to pierce through Beholder's center. He will not die, but it is not a minor injury.

The other beast chews the entire snake. Cha Jun Sung has taken the nutrients instead of Medusa.

Medusa realizes the situation and took position to attack him, but she had to escape because of the sword coming down at her. Her children must have worked hard to hunt supplements for their mother because of the exhaustion that she incurred. She could tell there were a lot of nutrients in the snake from the black smoke

coming out of his mouth.

“Why!”

“I have a lot to do. I don’t even have time to lounge around with you two here, but to go meet the White Queen?”

“We were going to take you back calmly..... I’ll cut off your limbs and drag you back by your torso. I’m sure they’ll regenerate as long as you don’t die.”

Medusa is angered and awakens again, but she is a little weaker than before because she lost her snake.

‘Beholder first!’

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung swoops down on Beholder. It is dangerous if Cha Jun Sung shakes up Beholder’s mind. Cha Jun Sung cannot attack both of his enemies at the same time, so he needed to choose one.

“You!”

The bone spear comes flying. He made his left arm thick like a shield and held it up at an angle. This creates less impact from the spear than blocking from the front.

“Kihit! Don’t come!”

“You’re too bothersome. I’ll kill you first.”

Beholder is busy taking care of his wounds. Cha Jun Sung made his tails into a shield as well and covered his body from two sides. He is capable of taking on Beholder with just his right arm.

Tentacles hit Cha Jun Sung. It is painful, but bearable. His right arm digs at Beholder’s eyeball. He is returning damage done four fold.

“You’re not defending against me?”

Medusa had only been about half of Cha Jun Sung’s size, but grew to be a similar size. This is power. Her snake hair has gotten bigger, and they were each big enough to bring on individual attacks now. Furthermore, the end of her tail split with a snake’s face coming out. Her whole body is made of snakes.

A power incomparable to the impact until now went diagonally through Cha Jun Sung’s tail and left arm shield, and stuck in his side.

“The poison hasn’t been diluted. I know that you’re strong, but that was reckless. There are 2 of us and you’re alone. This is the difference between one against one and two against one.”

Her snake hairs are 3 meters long, and they bare their teeth to

bite Cha Jun Sung. Though they are far away, they stretch out like rubber bands.

“Reckless? I gave it a try because it seemed doable.”

It is two against one, but their conditions are equal. Cha Jun Sung is not pushed back. He believes in this body. It can endure most attacks. He will handle the rest himself.

Cha Jun Sung twists and pulls his right hand, which is in Beholder. A big chunk of flesh comes out stuck to his nails.

‘Your weakness.....’

He did not have a chance to fight them in the virtual version, but Medusa’s weakness is her hair and Beholder’s is the nucleus stuck deep within his body.

He cut and pulled it out. He will kill them and go to Czechoslovakia to find his PDA.

‘I’m going back.’

He is a human, not a mutant. He will return to his colleagues. He will go back and find out why this happened to him. Do they think he will die here?

An angry roar comes from the center of a battlefield that has

been reduced to ruins. Anger is the base of the roar, but there was also a murderous and hateful feeling included.

Though they are worn out because they have not been taken care of, hundreds of buildings in relatively good shape were destroyed as though they were blown up by bombs. This is the result of Cha Jun Sung and Medusa fighting with level 8 power.

“Ugh! Damn you! I’ll find and kill you even if I have to search this entire world!”

The bone spear is stuck in the ground. The spear shakes with the strength from her arm. Medusa cannot find balance and wobbles.

She looks wretched. Most of her tail and hair snakes have been cut off and she has serious injuries. It is not her will. She is so tired she cannot keep going.

“Damn it..... Beholder.....”

Medusa looks at Beholder. He barely protected his nucleus, but his body has been chopped up. Cha Jun Sung knows their weaknesses. She does not know how. The important thing is that he knows.

“How are we going to look at the White Queen.....”

They have failed their mission. Other organs are another story, but the problem is that his brain was affected.

The brain administers memory. He will grow back to normal because the nucleus is safe, but he will lose the time and memory until now.

He is still Beholder, but he will be reborn.

It is true that they had let their guards down, but to be reduced to this when they had both attacked him. There is nothing more shameful. They gained nothing but lost so much.

A crack has been formed in her strong pride. She can only kill Cha Jun Sung in order to heal her pride, but it feels like she will have nightmares until that day comes.

# Chapter 152

---

“The restriction not to kill him became a hindrance because we had to hold back our strength.”

She cannot be sure whether or not she can kill him, but she had held back on her power in the final attack because of the pressure to capture him alive.

If she had stabbed at him with all of her power, he would not have been able to run away even if it killed him.

Medusa picks up Beholder's nucleus. She cannot just leave it here.

The area has been recognized as a battlefield for top level mutants, so anything ambiguous cannot come. She must rest as much as she can before going.

There are a lot that will try to take advantage of her weakened state once she leaves this place.

While Medusa was sitting in front of her bone spear, she heard a strange sound ahead. Something is coming. There are a lot of them. More than 50.

“Hey hey! She's really here! It's like the mission said – Medusa is here! She's on the brink of death!”

“Wow!”

“Does that mean we’re catching a level 8?”

“That’s a mutant I thought we’d only see in a level A mission, but we’re finding her in C.”

Everyone is wearing battlesuits, and they are force Lifers. Medusa considered what was going on and remembered something.

One day, strange humans started appearing to hunt mutants.

They were organized and came in by level. It is not something that is happening in just Medusa’s area, but all across Europe and the 6 continents.

Medusa’s lips twist coldly. She cannot understand the words that these humans with odd shells are saying, but she can get an idea from their behavior.

She was able to communicate with Cha Jun Sung because they are both mutants. It is Italian, but mutants are able to translate automatically.

“Mere humans... They’re not even mutants and they’ll come after me when I’m weakened? Actually, this is good. I’ll eat you and supplement my health.”

Beep beep!

Medusa's Italian is translated to the Lifers.

"You know you're 1.8 million points right now? 1.8 million is tremendous for hunting a single mutant, but you can't beat us with that body. Alright! Let's start!"

Medusa is ranked level 8 in level A missions. But as an aftermath of her combat with Cha Jun Sung, her mind and body have collapsed to level C 1.8 million.

She had become a target after a few hours since the mission was reestablished.

What Lifers would have been crazy enough to go into a mission to catch a level 8 mutant? They would not even be able to enter because level A has not been opened.

Medusa grabbed her bone spear and stood up. This is a part of her. When she consumed the remaining nutrients, the bone spear shrank to 3 meters.

"I won't just kill you. I have something to ask you too."

Medusa's eyes spark. They are insects that do not know their place. She will show them what hell is.

\*\*\*

Meanwhile, Cha Jun Sung escaped from Medusa and moved wildly without setting a direction. Like Medusa, he is not in a great state either.

He will get away first. It will be a long journey to Czechoslovakia and he does not have a sense of east and west, so there is no guarantee that he will take the right path.

This is not the earth that he lived on. He needs to establish a foundation to live in this world for the time being, whether that is a map, compass, or food.

“I’m all out of strength.”

It has been long since he hid his black smoke and steel-like body. He devoted himself to recovering while he ran away, but he could not expect rapid regeneration.

He needs to be relieved that his injuries have not gotten worse.

He cannot retain a demonic force any longer. He is defenseless from now on.

His black skin changes to a skin color that is almost white. External characteristics that are not fitting for humans like his

horns and tails disappear.

He looks just like the human Cha Jun Sung did, before he became a mutant.

Cha Jun Sung feels his face with his hand. He is naked when he looks down, but there is nothing that shows he is a mutant.

He cannot look at himself because he does not have a mirror, but it is a face he had for dozens of years. He can figure out whether it has come back just by touching it.

“It’s me from the outside.”

The body is Cha Jun Sung. He has just been put down due to extreme consumption of his nutrients and health. He is only human on the outside, but mutant on the inside.

“There has to be a way. Let’s wait until this guy wakes up.”

Beholder put the Oriax to sleep. They fought over the body night and day, and then cooperated with Beholder once he recognized him.

There is no choice, regardless of liking and not liking. A stranger is about to come in and take over if he does not cooperate. And the result was not bad.

Their impassioned minds cooled down enough for them to put everything else aside and discuss solutions. Now, they need to decide.

They cannot have two minds in one body. One needs to have total control or the body needs to be split into two.

“It seems possible.....”

The original two bodies are that of human and mutant. Cha Jun Sung was absorbed by the Oriax, but the Oriax does not kill its host.

The interesting thing here is that the fun Beholder had made it so that the stronger Oriax got pushed back by Cha Jun Sung's seemingly weaker mind.

“Can this guy fall away from the host? Won't that work then?”

It was like that in the virtual version too. They abandon the host and run away if it is no longer needed or in danger of death. They can separate on will.

If reality is the same as the virtual, he can become a simple human like before. He does not care that the Oriax would be going back to its life as a level 6.

If he keeps living with the Oriax in him, he might have to live in this place forever while fighting other mutants. He is totally

against that type of primitive life.

“I’m hungry.....”

He recognizes that he is a level 8. He is a predator that can go anywhere in the world without fear, but he needs to eat in order to survive as he is still a living creature. At this state, he would only be able to take on one or two big attacks. It would be too much to fight a level 7, but he can definitely catch a level 5.

Cha Jun Sung walks through a desolate city. An average human would have worried about mutant attacks while walking this street, but it is nothing for him.

It is novel and interesting. There are novels where the subjects are a perished world, and Cha Jun Sung also read those types of books with interest.

“I’m sure there will be survivors if I look around, since there were in the Dead Ark.”

Hiding in a world that is open to mutants – how difficult and painful must that be? It is better to commit suicide than to be ripped apart into pieces.

“Huh?”

Cha Jun Sung slowed down after walking for a while. Though he has been injured, he has no trouble seeing or hearing. He can feel

the movement through his level 8 senses.

Boom!

“There’s one. It’s far away, but it must be pretty big judging by the vibrations coming through the ground.”

Weak vibrations tickled the soles of his feet each time the mutant took a step. It is about 1km away. He is certain that it is big.

“As long as it’s not a level 7.”

Cha Jun Sung gulps. He looks like a person who has something delicious in front of him. But does he himself know what kind of expression he has on right now?

He would have doubted himself if he had even a small hand mirror.

\*\*\*

‘Devil Saurus.’

It is a top level 6 mutant evolved from lizards and looks like a giant carnivorous dinosaur from the cretaceous period, but it is twice as big.

A long curved horn of 6 meters is on its head as though it is a rhinoceros. It is twice the width of a human.

Devil Saurus used its arm with sharp nails to chew deliciously on mutants it has hunted. It is a dinosaur but its arm is so well-evolved that it would be able to use a sword well if given one.

‘Is it a Caicus? It’ll be impossible to take it on if the Caicus is the opponent.’

The Devil Saurus’ food is a Caicus. It is hard to determine because he is so far away, but it must not have been able to resist much before dying.

He understands. Devil Saurus is small but still 20 meters tall and 30 meters long. The bigger ones are even bigger by a full head.

Though the Caicus is strong, it is a level 5, meaning that it is ranked only in the middle as a predator among all levels 1 through 9.

‘Should I get it?’

He said that anything is okay as long as it is not a level 7, but it is ambiguous. The Devil Saurus can take blows. It is possible that it will withstand Cha Jun Sung’s attacks.

‘Two big attacks.’

He is not in an awakened state and mutation is difficult. If he puts all of his strength into one arm and attacks twice, he will basically become human for the time being.

While he was thinking for a while, the Devil Saurus burped. It is a physiological reaction that all living creatures show! It is full.

# Chapter 153

---

The Caicus was dug into with nails. It has scratched through and eaten the organs and fleshy parts. All that is left are parts like arms and calves.

‘I’ll recover a little with even that much. Let’s not get greedy and work easily.’

There is no reason to get the Devil Saurus. It is enough to enter dangerous situations only when it is absolutely necessary.

The Devil Saurus disappears. This area must be under its influence.

The wind blows in Cha Jun Sung’s direction. It must keep blowing this way. It will become troublesome if the wind reverses and the Devil Saurus gets a whiff of him.

“That pig. It ate this up clean. A Caicus is several tons in weight.”

Cha Jun Sung grumbles as he looks at the hacked up corpse. Then he put his hand where there is flesh left over.

A shadow draped over his hand for a moment, and strange teeth appeared all over his fingers and hand to swallow the flesh.

He stretched automatically without having to move, and sucked

up the organ leftovers lying at a distance. He even clung to the skin and bones.

‘My strength is coming back.’

If his state before had been a fiercely glowing flame that had been put out, he is now a wick that is flickering light since eating the Caicus’ corpse.

His dry skin becomes glossy. He did not get bigger, but his muscles become harder with the nutrient intake and his body is activated.

“I can recover 30 to 40% by eating. I have no choice but to depend on rest for the rest. It’ll be best not to fight beyond hunting.”

It’s like Cha Jun Sung is a patient. If he had been a human, he would be getting an IV drip in the hospital right now.

He has no problem with motion as he is a level 8, but he has become weak. Eating a mutant will help him with nutrients and stamina.

If he wants to go back to normal, he must get an enormous supply of nutrients and treat his damaged body without resting. But does a patient get better just by eating?

Cha Jun Sung needs time. Like Medusa, he needs to get medical treatment for several months. He can take on hordes of level 6s

once he is recovered to an extent, but it would be preferable to avoid level 7s.

A tiger does not get killed by a rabbit just because it is injured. But what if it is a fox? A fox would be able to rip the skin of an injured tiger.

“A little bit more... This isn’t enough.”

It feels like he did not get to eat to the end. There is a saying, ‘Having too much is as bad as having too little’. This is a case where Cha Jun Sung cannot agree.

“Should I catch it?”

The Devil Saurus is not far away. It is near. It cannot smell him because of the direction of the wind, so it will not have even realized his presence.

Cha Jun Sung considered it a bit and decided not to catch it. With this much, there will not be much of an issue in moving around.

It is also a good idea to eat level 1 and 2s while on his way to Czechoslovakia.

“Is there a supermarket somewhere? I’m sure something will come out.”

There is a lot that he needs to find. This is the first time his residual period has been so long in Life Mission. The Dead Ark had been over 1 month. He cannot even get a sense of how much time has passed since he was taken over by the Oriax.

At least a few months must have passed, and the worst-case scenario could be years. Time is passing by even at this moment as he stands still.

“Some clothing at least.”

Even if no one is watching, he is embarrassed to walk around nude. Though he has become a mutant, he still has a concept of clothing. He would cover himself with rags if he could.

Cha Jun Sung was about to walk in the opposite direction of where he could tell the Devil Saurus was. He must be unlucky, because the wind switched direction. Mutants' sense of smell is similar to that of animals. It is different to the degenerated senses of humans.

“Ugh..... Well.”

The Devil Saurus sniffed and changed its direction to where Cha Jun Sung is. Why is it coming towards him? It is because of the unique smell. It is interested in this smell that he is experiencing for the first time.

Living as a predator, it did not think that there are individuals

stronger than itself.

Cha Jun Sun did not move. He could run away immediately if he wants to. He would not have to go very far and all he would have to do is jump around on top of tall buildings. But that action in itself hurts his pride. He does not want to jump around in high places like a monkey just because of a dinosaur with large arms and legs.

The Devil Saurus looks on in puzzlement when he sees Cha Jun Sung, and goes around him in circles. It is on alert, but still puts its nose to him.

Cha Jun Sung's face is possessed by a demon. It is partial. Horns come out and his face becomes black.

2 eyes become 9, and they look at the Devil Saurus.

[I'll let you live. Go back.]

He is speaking in mutant language. Humans will only hear it as growling, but Cha Jun Sung spoke so that the Devil Saurus could understand.

The Devil Saurus roars and smacks its tail down. A crater forms in the stone ground and the dust spreads everywhere. It is angry.

[This is my territory! I'm king! I say who has the right to live and die. You're a crazy bastard for giving orders to the king! I'll kill you!]

Its tail attack is different from that of the Blood Suckers but still similar in strength, and sweeps ahead of it.

Cha Jun Sung throws his body back. His expression becomes heinous. Mutant instinct – it is rebellion for a lower level mutant to go against a higher level mutant.

‘Death with one blow will be difficult. I’ll shake up its core and cut off its mobility.’

It avoids him well. The target is small, so hitting it is work in itself.

Cha Jun Sung watched for an opportunity. There is no effect in leaving a small wound. There is something he has had in mind since the Devil Saurus appeared. He will draw that out.

Cha Jun Sung’s right arm changes into a 2 meter sword. Then he transformed. This results in less energy consumption.

‘Tail, then legs.’

The Devil Saurus has slower regeneration compared to mutants of its level. Instead, its skin is as thick as it is big and its muscles are tough, so those are at the same level. With the force of a level 8, he can cut through it as if it is jelly.

The transformed sword cuts the tail. Blood colors the ground. Because it is so thick, he needs to go at it twice before it is cut off.

Creatures that balance their weight with their tails find it hard to balance even if their two legs are in perfect condition.

Everything is relative. Battlesuit-wearing human Cha Jun Sung would have died after leaving minor wounds. But to mutant Cha Jun Sung who has become level 8, level 6 is just prey. Even when he has a major injury.

It did not even take a minute to cut its legs off in addition to the tail. They will regenerate if he lets it be, but he will not do that.

Kung!

“Don’t yell, you piece of trash.”

Cha Jun Sung flashes a red light and chops up the Devil Saurus. When he digs into its chest, blood splatters onto Cha Jun Sung.

Reasoning becomes paralyzed. In the past, he would have avoided it out of fright but now, it just makes him happy. On top of that, the blood coming into his mouth is sweeter than a soft drink.

Cha Jun Sung’s body grows larger and he chomps on the Devil Saurus’ flesh. It is just exercise for his mouth and his entire body is already eating. A black shadow covered the Devil Saurus as though it is falling into quicksand. He is absorbing it whole rather than

eating it by part.

Lower level mutants tremble in fear as the area's dominating mutant is eaten by a stronger mutant. They watch in order to remember what Cha Jun Sung looks like. They need to know what he looks like so they can avoid him later. It is the method with which weaker creatures survive.

# Chapter 154

---

“..... This isn’t it.”

Cha Jun Sung sits on the ground with a devastated expression. He looked down at his hands and kept saying ‘This isn’t it’.

“I ate a mutant with my mouth. And thought it tasted good! I can’t control it! Does this make sense? I’m not an animal, but I ate a mutant with my mouth!”

He can accept taking in the mutant through touch, as he has removed the mask of a human ever since the Oriax took him on as a host.

“Is my mind becoming that of a mutant too? Have I lost myself?”

That is the only way to explain it. He thought that he might have the mask of a mutant, but that his core is human. He was wrong. Both his mind and body have become mutant.

If he keeps going like this, he might deny his nature and forget the fact that he was once human. That cannot happen. He cannot lose his mind as a human.

He needs to maintain it if he wants to return to reality. If he loses his mind, he might start to hope to stay in this place. Reality is the world of the hunters.

“Let’s just hold out for a few days.”

There is nothing he can do alone. Once the Oriax wakes up, he needs to find a way to send it out of his body. He ripped flesh and sucked blood within a day of coming back to his senses. It looks like he will not be able to last until he gets to Czechoslovakia.

Cha Jun Sung let out a sigh dejectedly and gets moving. However it happened, most of his health has returned since he ate the Devil Saurus.

He does not want to go blindly just because he cannot decide on a direction to go, so he will look around the area for things that he needs.

\*\*\*

This is around when Cha Jun Sung arrives in Czechoslovakia. While he was going to Czechoslovakia, Medusa was going back to England with Beholder, who had become a nucleus. Titan and Kimeira had put their strength together to take over Blood Lord, and have dragged him with them. It had been possible because of Titan.

“Black smoke?”

“Yeah. Black smoke came out of his mouth. It was a good thing Beholder was there. If I had been alone, I would have lost. I’m pretty sure not even you would have been guaranteed to beat him

either.”

Inferno is strong. He is surely the best of all of the nightmares in Europe.

Even in Asia, only Red Eye can take him on. There may not be more than 5 mutants that could take him on in all 6 continents.

But the black devil they met this time had been really strong. It felt like they had seen the Black Demon that they had only ever heard about. Though this does not mean that is really what happened.

No matter how strong a nightmare level mutant is, they cannot be compared to disasters.

“Black smoke, you say.....”

“Can you think of something?”

“No.”

“Don’t you think he might be Black Demon’s offspring? I didn’t think so at first either, but his characteristics, appearance, and combat style are too similar to what I’ve heard.”

“Forget it. I’ll report this to her Majesty. Take good care of Beholder.”

Inferno cut Medusa off. There is no way he is Black Demon, and he cannot be an offspring either. How can he be sure? It is a situation in which he can be certain.

“Your Majesty! It’s Inferno.”

“Come in.”

A fine voice comes from the office. Inferno opens the door and bows his head as soon as he enters.

It is out of respect, but also because of Medusa’s failure in the mission.

“So you failed.”

“I’m sorry. I should have gone myself. He is said to be too strong to capture with Medusa and Beholder’s power.”

“It is already a failure. I will hear the report properly. Lift your head.”

Inferno lifts his head. He can see the empress.

A monotonously white figure – hair, eyes, skin – looks at Inferno. She looks like a doll with eyes.

A being that spills white blood. It is Europe's White Queen, Lobelira.

Though she has become a mutant, she is the last remaining princess of the British royal lineage. There are very few who know this.

This including both mutants and humans. Because of that, Lifers who played the virtual version only know the name White Queen and do not really know who she is.

“So.....”

Inferno reported everything he heard from Medusa.

The White Queen had an interested expression until her white eyes became round at mention of black smoke. She is surprised. The unidentified man sitting in front of her also showed a strange reaction.

“Black smoke? Was it really black smoke? And the characteristics were as you say?”

“Ye – yes.”

The man smirks gleefully. Inferno wanted to ask the meaning of this smile, but did not. He does not get a voice.

“Leave. I’ll call you separately.”

“Yes!”

Inferno leaves the office. White Queen drank the cooling tea. Hot tea is good, but cooled tea is not bad either.

“He will have wanted to ask if it was you yourself or your child.”

“I’ll answer. If it had been me, I wouldn’t have let Medusa and Beholder live. And my only child is Red Eye, so he has nothing to do with me.”

The man crosses his arms and watches White Queen with an arrogant expression.

There is no hesitation in looking at a disaster. His eyes, which look like black beads, look like they are ready to turn heaven and earth over.

He is Black Demon Aduroque, the strongest mutant in existence.

‘Is it an awakening? Is that possible? He’ll have to take a different path from me. I can only think that the future has been twisted by passing off the notebook.’

Cha Jun Sung, stuck in the middle, has no fate with mutants. He

needed to have pioneered a new path for the future through the notebook as a medium. That is why it was delivered to him. It was so he would not take the same path.

‘So it works out like this, too. Interesting. Then are there 2 of me in one era?’

It is just a guess but from the way Black Demon sees it, Cha Jun Sung has not been completely awakened yet. He can tell just from the way Cha Jun Sung struggled against Medusa and Beholder.

Black Demon is also stronger now than he was during his initial awakening, but there was not such a big difference. He had already transcended perfection from the moment he was awakened.

He would have been able to slay them unilaterally with just 50% of his strength.

“What are you thinking?”

“I thought about he who is similar to me. I’m gaining curiosity.”

Black Demon did not hide his thoughts. Currently, no one knows that they are connected through a complex relationship. As long as he does not tell anyone.

“More than that, have you decided? I’ll form an alliance with you if you accept my condition.”

“The handicap is too big. If you change your mind after I accept, everything loses ground. 6 disasters would become 5.”

“You want to drag me into the battlefield. Put everything on the line. Once it starts, there’s no end. Make me believe you.”

White Queen proposed an alliance. It does not matter either way for Black Demon, but the recent movements of North and South Africa are suspicious.

Evil Queen in particular – he does not know what she was like when she was human, but she surpasses ambition and is vain. He would just laugh her off as garbage if she was not able, but unfortunately she is one of the disasters. She is a ticking time bomb.

Evil Queen is after Asia. She does not want to take the land.

As was said before, she is vain. Her goal is to have the world under feet, to be treated as a queen. He has confidence if it is a one-on-one fight. It is just that if South America’s skull joins, it becomes a situation where he cannot be 100% sure to win.

# Chapter 155

---

“If I had made this proposal first, I would have listened to your condition. It’s a pity that it wasn’t me, so make your decision. Will you accept?”

They left matters regarding Cha Jun Sung to the side for a moment. If his level increases, they will have to meet even if they do not want to. They can figure it out then.

White Queen closes her eyes in consideration. Her finger taps the table. Black Demon did not rush her. He knows that it is an unreasonable demand.

“Alright.”

“Ho?”

“I’ll trust you and kill him with my own hands. I ask for your support.”

“I’ll support with Red Eye and Tacit Wriggle. Trust me. If you play your part well, there won’t be any issues for the underlings’ battles.”

“Hah! What is a Tacit Wriggle?”

“The son is a new recruit from New Zealand. It’s what I call him

since he is quiet for a worrisome parasite type.”

Two is enough. Parasite King arrived safely in the Philippines. He has reduced parasitism as much as possible and is struggling with the other mutants there.

Black Demon gets up. He is going back to Korea since his work here is done.

“How much time do you need?”

“Just give me 1 year. We need that much to grow Beholder.”

Beholder’s ability excels individually, but shines more in a massive war. She must grow him and take him with her.

Black Demon nods in affirmation and leaves the office.

Shortly after.

A giant mutant, large enough to cover Buckingham Palace, appears. Black Demon gets on it and they disappear into the clouds. At a glance, it resembles a dragon from the Middle Ages, but it is Black Demon’s mutant pet, Dragonos.

“Make him trust..... Human.”

Under White Queen's standards, Black Demon is the only being that goes around while revealing his thoughts. He remains the most human of them as well. There is nothing to fear if he agrees to become their ally. They will be able to take on the other 3 disasters if they combine their strength. That is what Black Demon is like.

White Queen looks south. She is not sure if that is actually south. She has just looked in the direction relative to how she is sitting.

“Anubis....”

White Queen says quietly. It is an ancient Egyptian god that controls death. It is also called the god of canines, and is Africa's disaster.

Noble king Anubis.

3 of the 6 disasters evolved from humans, but the other 3 did not. That must be why the way they think is different.

Anubis initially evolved from an animal. They know that it is in the canine family, but the rest has not been revealed. He morbidly hates humans.

Africa's humanity became extinct because of his direct involvement.

“It's a lifetime of gambling.”

The mutant that White Queen needs to kill is Anubis, who is at the peak. Africa's influence is higher than Europe's. But if the support comes, Europe has an advantage.

The key to success or failure is whether she can win against Anubis or not.

White Queen looks up to the ceiling with an expressionless face. It is dangerous but she decided to just think of it as a way to get what she wants.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung is walking around a supermarket in casual clothing. He has a large hiking backpack on his back, which is full of necessities he found while searching through the city.

It was easy to find things like clothes and shoes. There are retail stores everywhere. He did not have food in there because he could just consume mutants. He tried to find some but did not see any. It had either already been looted or rotten.

“Found it.”

Cha Jun Sung looks over a small store and enters. All he needs to find are a map and compass, but these were the ones bothering him. The inside is a mess like everywhere else. Odds and ends are rolling around. It would be stranger if it were clean since it has

been neglected for a long time.

Cha Jun Sung picks up a world map made of quality leather. He picked an expensive compass as well. It will become a long distance journey.

He is not the type to go after luxury brands, but expensive things are less likely to break.

“I’ll take a few more in case.”

There is extra space in the pack. He needs to go through this bothersome task again if he takes one of each and something breaks. It is better to end it all in one go.

“All done.”

He completed preparations for departure within 2 days. This would not have been necessary if he had his PDA and space compression bag, but he is going through a struggle.

Kik!

He hears a cry from a corner of the market. Cha Jun Sung glanced over and lost interest. It is a level 1 that chose this place as its home. It has come in for the first time and runs away in terror with a young roar. It will not have the nerve to take the lead.

“It’s alright to have a conversation.”

There is no hindrance. The supermarket entrance is sized for humans. Anything greater than mid-sized mutants cannot enter. There is no worry because even if something breaks through the wall to get in, it will make a lot of noise.

“I know you’re awake. Don’t pretend you’re not and disappear, you sly bastard.”

Cha Jun Sung mumbles to himself. Is he crazy? Of course not.

He is talking to the Oriax that has awakened. He felt it wake up a little while ago. Cha Jun Sung’s biggest problem right now is the Oriax.

The enemy within is more dangerous than the enemy outside. To him, the Oriax is the enemy within. If it is determined to make a fit, there is no way for him to do anything about it.

[Let’s refrain from doing anything that’s harmful to the body from now on. It’s a loss for both of us.]

It is a different concept from that of Odin. It is a direct voice into his brain. What the Oriax wants to say comes into his mind like thoughts. Since it has absorbed Cha Jun Sung’s abilities, a smooth conversation is possible.

In the beginning, it only had the thought that it needs to kill Cha

Jun Sung's mind and take over the body. That is definite. That is why they choose hosts.

But it had not imagined that the fight to take over the body would last so long. The more surprising thing is that it is not over, but that they are in a truce.

If they decide not to give in and fight it out to the end, they could go back to fighting fiercely. That is something that they do not want.

[What are you? Are you a human?]

“Then do you think I’m a mutant like you?”

[I tried to absorb you and take shape in my style, but it was impossible. Your body flowed regardless of my will as though it’s an unbridled colt.]

“What do you mean?”

[I lit the fire, but the waking appearance is your own.]

[You said that mutants were created because of the A virus? It’s a very small amount, but you were already infected when I was infiltrating you.]

Hands need to match up to clap. There cannot be a clap with just

one hand, no matter what the person does. This is what the Oriax is telling him. It might be hard to believe, but there is no need to listen to the words and understand. What the Oriax is trying to say is relayed automatically in his mind.

“That means.....”

[I’m the cause, but the waking appearance is something you already had.]

“How do you explain the whole body mutation?”

[That’s yours as well. I just used it. According to the ranking you people have, I’m level 7. Medusa and Beholder are level 8.]

A level 7 cannot become 8 from taking on a host.

“You’re saying that’s me?”

[Yeah. That was you. There was mutant potential hidden inside of you. You were awakened as a level 8 because I released the seal.]

“..... You said a small amount of the virus?”

[It seems to be because of body modifications or whatever that is. It’s a contradiction that the human body’s abilities are increased in ten-fold in the first place.]

# Chapter 156

---

Side effects of body modifications. There are differences for individuals, but is that why they experienced madness? Were they injecting the A virus into their bodies?

The puzzle is coming together. Since beginning body modifications, they were receiving dilutions of A virus. It would have been like nothing normally, but the problem had arisen when the Oriax entered his body. The Oriax is a lump of virus.

It bothered the small amount of the virus to make his mutant potential explode all at once.

“Then that means all Lifers have been injected with A virus. Are we lab rats or something? What on earth have the helpers done?”

He is forming a lot of suspicions that he has not had until now. This must be why it is said that no one knows until they encounter something strange.

[Do you want to separate from me? I'll do it for you if that's what you want. I'm somehow a bit weary of you. I feel like I'll be the one eaten up if I stay with you.]

The Oriax unexpectedly did not make trouble and said that it would detach itself. Then Cha Jun Sung became nervous. What about after it gives him up?

He will be alone in this world full of mutants. He does not have a battlesuit or a vibrating weapon. If he becomes an average human, regardless of his 4th stage of body modifications, how is he to survive? Does he need to dig tunnels underground to move around?

“Let’s go together until I can return to reality.”

[Looking strictly at results, I’ve gained a lot from you. I can do that much for you. How do you want to separate? Do you want to try testing it out?]

Cha Jun Sung nods. They can test it. They need to try it out anyway. They need to prepare for the worst-case scenario.

[Now?]

“Now.”

It is more dangerous if they go outside and separate. The lower level mutants here are scared of him right now. There is no safer place than where they are now.

[Then. I’m starting.]

Thump thump.

Cha Jun Sung’s heart beats faster. He is hoping that the results

are on the better side.

Bang!

Something goes high and crosses between buildings. It was like looking at a grasshopper and its ability to jump is incredible. It is none other than Cha Jun Sung. Leaving his tremendous abilities and walking slowly is a waste of time.

It has been a couple of months since he has left Rome. He did not count the days. There is no use. He invested all of his time that was not spent on eating, sleeping, and fighting, on traveling.

Playing numbers by counting the days does not help him in what he needs to do. It might just make him impatient. It is wiser to clear his mind.

[..... We're going the right way, right?]

“Probably?”

Honestly, he is not very confident. Going through Europe with just a map and compass in itself is reckless. Cha Jun Sung almost went the complete opposite way to France because he took the wrong direction at first. He had believed that he was going the right way. It is fortunate that he realized coincidentally on the way. If not, he would be looking at the sea right about now.

It would have been quick if he had gone in a straight line, but he

has gone around. Cha Jun Sung's current location is Austria's capital, Vienna. Czechoslovakia is north of here in 12:00 direction.

"Let's rest in this city today."

[As you wish.]

He does not easily feel exhaustion since he has transcended human limits. This is the same case for his stamina. He is vigorous no matter how much he walks.

He is resting not because he is tired, but because it is a bother. He needs to recharge occasionally for there not to be any issues with moving. He is sick of seeing mutants everyday. Cha Jun Sung chose a house at random and went inside.

There should be a good place to rest if he searches well enough, but it is all the same from a labor efficiency perspective.

Kung!

Kyak!

Cha Jun Sung lets out a bloodthirsty roar. Mutants living nearby are terrified and run away. It is out of nowhere, but there is a reason for it.

If he does this, he is not bothered while he rests. Other mutants

take this as the appearance of a strong mutant and they leave their homes.

It is effective. He has almost completely recovered from the injuries he got from Medusa over the past few months. It is not 100% perfect, but he is 80% better.

Even a level 7 would run away from this roar. There is nothing he can do if there is a level 8, but he has not seen one since Medusa.

[You're good.]

"I use it once in awhile when I'm bored, so it would be weirder if I wasn't good at it."

[I mean you're not averse to using a mutant's powers. You hated it at first. Humans are so interesting.]

"Whew! What can we do when there's no other way. If you leave my body, I become a normal human being. This world is hell to someone without power like me."

The separation they did as a test. The result was that they split splendidly. As soon as the Oriax left his body, Cha Jun Sung became a simple human. He returned to his state in reality, to when he initialized the 4th stage of body modifications. It is ambiguous as to whether this is a good or bad thing.

Fusing again was not difficult either. Once he accepted the Oriax

naturally instead of by force as he had done before, he became a level 8 mutant again.

He has become an unusual body that can become human or mutant. There is no way to prove this scientifically, but this is what the two of them are thinking.

The Oriax is a parasitic type that keeps its host alive. It was able to exercise its mutant potential when it absorbed Cha Jun Sung, but it was only half.

With various issues, they did not take over each other and came to coexist in one body. The subject is Cha Jun Sung but in his absence, the Oriax can take control.

It can separate from the body as is characteristic of the Oriax, but it seems everything related to the A virus has moved over to it. As was said before, there is no way to prove this. This is all just a hypothesis.

The important thing is that he can become a simple human being. Cha Jun Sung cannot get near Czechoslovakia on his own. He desperately needs the Oriax's help. So what else could he do? He needs to use mutant abilities even if he does not want to.

'This bastard won't run away while I'm sleeping, will he? That would be the worst.'

Cha Jun Sung trembles in fear. The only weapon he has now is

the Oriax. Though they are helping each other, there is no reason to maintain their relationship.

[Don't worry. I'll keep this state for the time being. To use human expression, your body is a demonic house that I've bought with my own money.]

The Oriax read Cha Jun Sung's thoughts. It is a waste to throw him away, but uncomfortable to keep. It cannot exert the power of level 8 once they separate.

That is the greatest reason why it is not leaving him. It would have been able to say with certainty that it would have left if it could be guaranteed that they could separate and it could keep living as a level 8.

"But how do I find the location? Do you remember where you were living?"

[I remember my area, but I don't know the way in from outside.]

He had gone south in a craze, and going back is work in itself. All Cha Jun Sung knows is that Czechoslovakia is smaller than Korea. He needs to just dig through everything because it is not a large difference. It is total manual labor. Going back and forth could take as long as a round trip.

"How come I don't see any survivors? Are they all living in one place?"

He has not seen a single human on his way here. Cha Jun Sung does not know this, but he has unintentionally guessed correctly that they are gathered in one place. They escaped the mutants and are living in a place they named Survivors' Camp. Cities no longer welcome humans.

[Why do you want to find survivors?]

"To ask at least. I would see if there's anything they know about Public Underground in Czechoslovakia. There might be someone who knows about such a big bunker."

[It'd be faster to ask a mutant. There might be a language barrier, but the more intelligent ones should be able to understand through body language.]

There are mutants everywhere. This would be more effective than banking on human survivors when they do not know if they will ever see one.

"Wouldn't a person be better? It'll be such a hassle to explain this to every mutant we see."

[Does anything change if you meet a human? Can you speak Czech?]

Cha Jun Sung zones out. Czech? Of course he can't. He cannot even speak English, so of course he cannot speak Czech.

He might as well be mute without his translator. That is a situation that most Lifers cannot avoid.

[Going through the hassle of explaining with body language is the same whether you do it with humans or mutants.]

[Don't waste your time on something that won't work, and change your mind.]

“..... Shut up.”

At that moment, Cha Jun Sung saw an overlap between the cheeky way the Oriax was speaking with Odin.

He felt like he would be hearing annoying things from the both of them once he finds his PDA again.

# Chapter 157

---

Cha Jun Sung encountered countless mutants while going through the virtual version of Life Mission. It was the same while going through the virtual version. However, he is going through the same experience again while remaining in the mission since Public Underground.

Bang bang bang bang!

2 mutants fight. One looks like a human like the Caicus but it is almost 60 meters tall, and the other is small at about 5 or 6 meters.

There is no way to imagine just from size, but the 2 mutants are at neck and neck. It is a battle of monsters. The aftermath is a mess of collapsed buildings.

“Metal Giant and Twister! It’s fun to watch such vigorous guys going at it!”

Cha Jun Sung could not take his eyes off of the battle. They are both level 7s. Metal Giant is also called Iron Giant. Like its name and appearance, it uses its enormous size and strength to smash everything.

Boom!

Even now, a 15-story building goes down under its fist.

The dusty area swirls and creates a sandstorm. It moves around as though alive. It must be alive from the way it goes at Metal Giant. That is Twister's combat style.

Twister has large and small spiral blades all over its body. It rotates its body and approaches the enemy to grind it up.

“Looks like Metal Giant will win.”

[The situation isn't good and you can't ignore each of their weaknesses and strengths.]

There is no way to deny their strength as level 7s, but Twister's blades are not having an impact on Metal Giant. Among level 7s, Metal Giant is among the top 10 while Twister is on the weaker side. They are on separate poles. Even as part of the same level, there are bound to be a distinction between the weak and strong.

“Twister's side?”

[Metal Giant is big, so it'll take time to take over its body. Twister is better if you want to end it quickly.]

Over several days, Cha Jun Sung and Oriax exchanged opinions and consulted on finding out about Public Underground through humans and mutants. They even talked about Oriax's abilities. It is a parasitic type. As long as the conditions are right, it could take over high level mutants as well.

Though it does not kill the host, it takes over the mind so that the information that the host has is handed over. This is how they are trying to get information.

It cannot be parasitic indefinitely. As its nutrient and energy consumption were extreme, it needs to leave enough time. That is why they came up with high level parasitism.

Level 7s have low activity levels compared to their wide area. These are conditions in which they can win on quality rather than quantity. Oriax made the suggestion and Cha Jun Sung accepted it positively. They tried it once and it was a success.

Unfortunately, they did not get the information that they wanted. They just absorbed a mutant at random.

Metal Giant brings its left hand down on Twister.

It might be thought of as slow, but it is not. Its attack range is wide as well, so one needs to be cautious.

Papat!

Twister moved to the side to avoid the left hand. Blocking it is too much. If it gets hit, it will be crushed so that its head is next to its foot.

Metal Giant predicted that Twister would avoid the left hand and calculated Twister's route to bring down its right hand.

Bang bang bang!

Blood splatters and bones break. Twister is injured and embedded in the ground. Metal Giant's hand is also severely ripped up from the force of the tornado, but there is no danger to its life.

"It's over. Let's go."

Bang!

As soon as Cha Jun Sung awakens, his inner demon shows itself. He rushes at the back of Metal Giant's head. He cannot leave Twister to die. It could have information that he needs.

[Ugh! A surprise attack from a level 8 to a level 7. How embarrassing. Let's end it quickly.]

Both of Cha Jun Sung's arms change into great swords. He put his palms together to fuse them, making it an even bigger sword. It became nearly half of Metal Giant's size.

"I'm pushing through! Sword blow!"

Metal Giant sensed him coming and turned around, but it was too late. The scene that filled its view when it turned was the Grim Reaper, that had come all the way to its forehead.

It is split from the head down to the back. It had resistance, but this was nothing compared to Cha Jun Sung's force. The image of a 60 meter giant splitting with its organs spilling out to the sides is inexpressibly heinous.

[Sword blow? Is that a technique you used in Life Mission? Don't do stuff like this from now on. It's so embarrassing I can't lift my head.]

Cha Jun Sung scratches his cheek. He had just shouted in excitement, but the feedback is critical. It must not be something he should do past the age of 30.

Cha Jun Sung looked at Metal Giant's corpse and then his wrist.

"Whew! If I had the PDA, I would've gathered millions of points by now."

Since he does not have the PDA now, the points will not be added on even when he goes back to reality. He does not know whether the helpers are watching him or not.

He is not always in attack mode and there is no way to predict his changes, but the helpers have a position on unique mutants as a base. If they could not get the location, they would not have been able to establish the mission in the first place.

'Hang on.'

Cha Jun Sung looks into the past. A memory that comes back all of a sudden. It is what Odin and the other helpers said at the same time a long time ago when Red Eye appeared.

[Variable occurrence. Satellite program activation. Estimated 3 hours until confirmation.]

He had ignored it subconsciously, but he is sure that they said this. It might even be possible with the helpers' super science that allows them to bring them back and forth between dimensions so easily.

Cha Jun Sung looks up at the wide sky. Space, which is not visible even with level 8 abilities. Could the fruit of the most advanced science be up there?

‘I’m sure I’ll find out once I find my PDA and meet Odin.’

If Odin is watching his every move, it will know in detail all of the changes that have gone through his body because of the Oriax.

[If you really look at it, you all who are hunting mutants are also pieces on this chessboard.]

“I can’t refute that.”

It looks like Lifers are the hunters at a glance so it looks better, but he was getting the sense that that is not so much the case as time went on.

Who are the helpers and why was Life Mission created? What is the mutant world and what is the reality where Cha Jun Sung lives?

There is nothing he knows, so he cannot even find an association point. Even still, there has been a lot of development compared to the beginning. Back then, he did not even have doubts.

Cha Jun Sung stopped thinking about it and went to the collapsed Twister. It is in its awakened state. Twister gave up its life as soon as it saw Cha Jun Sung.

It realized that he is a predator it cannot handle. It does not have the confidence even if its body were normal. There is no need for words to describe how it is now when its body is a mess.

“What do you think?”

[It lost its will to fight. It's easy to take over a collapsed mind.]

[Shall I start?]

“Yeah.”

There is a chill in the surroundings following Metal Giant and Twister's battle. All mutants have run away. It seems to be safe.

[I'm saying this just in case, but be careful. If I die, you become weak too.]

The Oriax leaves Cha Jun Sung's body. A great power that had dominated his entire body scatters like smoke and he becomes helpless. He has become a human.

The time it takes to absorb is a few hours at the least and a day at most. For that time, Cha Jun Sung is defenseless. He is as good as dead if he is discovered by a mutant.

# Chapter 158

---

Cutting everything else out and getting to the point, Twister knows nothing about Public Underground. But that does not mean they got nothing out of it.

They found out the location of the new level 7 living on Czechoslovakia's border. It is impossible to fish like before, so it caught with its hands.

Oriax took over the last and a month passed quickly like that. Then at a random moment, they got the information they wanted.

The sixth level 7 they caught knew about the Oriax's mother. That means their habitats overlap. There is no better good news for Cha Jun Sung. They are close. They just have to go over one area.

[It's the area my mother ruled until the Blood Suckers were born.]

Oriax's words are tense. It is familiar scenery to Cha Jun Sung. He does not know how long it has been since he has been back. It is a new feeling.

“Where’s the hole?”

[In the center. This is the outside, so you have to go further in.]

Oriax shows him the way. Cha Jun Sung moved in the direction it instructed him to. It is a large city as it is where level 7s lived. He had been slow because he had gone on foot, but he was not impatient.

‘Lost time.....’

Just the time he met Medusa and Beholder and came back to his senses was half a year. Everything before that is blank. A few days or a few years could have passed.

But there is such a thing as a feeling, and he feels like he drifted in the mission for at least 1 year. How are his party members doing? Are they safe?

If the notebook is right, level B should have been opened and they should be contacting recruitment candidates, but everything has become tangled up. Was it a mistake to choose Public Underground as their level C advancement mission? He cannot decide whether becoming this strong was luck or misfortune.

[We've arrived.]

“I see.”

He can see a big hole. Cha Jun Sung stopped. He had taken the hit while looking down into this. It is alright now, but it had been terrible at the time.

‘The despair of being something that is not me and the depravity of having everything taken from me. It is not that easy to feel all types of bad feelings at the same time.’

[My instincts told me when I first saw you to eat you up. That I could become a complete adult. I guess I recognized your potential power.]

“Forget it. It’s in the past. I’m going down.”

Cha Jun Sung jumped down. It is hundreds of meters high, but he did not pay mind.

Boom!

The ground cracked under the impact and his footprint forms. He adjusted his senses and looked around. There is nothing. It is completely empty.

The bones of the Blood Suckers and Devils lay around randomly, discolored yellow. The thousands of cocoons that had been stuck to the walls are crumbled and only their dust flies around. They could have left because there has been enough time for them to be born.

[Look there. That track. That wasn’t there before. Seems Blood Lord was here. He must have come back to get his children.]

One wall of Public Underground has fallen down. Cha Jun Sung’s memory is foggy, but he was sane while going through Public

Underground.

From the size of the track, there is nothing he can think of but Blood Lord. Blood Lord will know the way, so he would have been ten-fold faster than Cha Jun Sung.

“PDA, space compression bag.”

Cha Jun Sung started digging through Public Underground. He cannot detect them with his senses as they are not alive. He only has his eyes to search with.

“It’s here.”

Items he packed to come here are in the space compression bag. He could be active immediately if he wanted to if he just had the battlesuit.

“Card.....”

The biggest reason why he needed to find the space compression bag. The opening card he looted from the bidding war. It would not matter if he lost everything else, but he needs this.

It becomes more valuable over time, and time has stopped for him. By now, it will be unimaginable in value.

“Just as I thought, it’s off.”

He put the bag on his back and picked up the PDA. The power is off now and the second he turns it on, he will be connected to Odin. There is something he needs to do before then.

“What should we do?”

[Will you be able to handle it? They might try to kill you. No, us.]

“Kill? That’s impossible. No matter how strong Lifers have gotten, they’ll be wandering as level C or B in level 6 or 7. They can’t touch level 8.”

He has already transcended his limits. He has the ability to slaughter thousands of Lifers in battlesuits. He would turn Mechanic City over whole.

“Or well, run away to reality.”

This is all if it is discovered that the Oriax is hiding somewhere inside Cha Jun Sung. There is no problem if he does not get caught.

[Fine. Let’s go.]

“I’m turning it on?”

[Just in case, I’ll stop being active and sleep. Wake me up when

you need me.]

It is a dangerous gamble to move a mutant to Mechanic City and reality. No one will have tried this before, will they? It is a waste to give up this power.

Zing!

Cha Jun Sung turns the PDA on. The light turns on and the system is rebooted. Nothing has changed and it works well. It is just that the helper is not active.

“Hey, Odin.”

He waited. If he has become connected with the helpers in any way, something – whether it is a radio wave – would have gone through and they will realize that it has been reactivated.

If for some reason it does not activate, there is only one method left. He must search through this entire world to find an active Lifer.

Beep beep!

[System booting.... Booting complete.]

After about 5 minutes, the PDA reacted. Cha Jun Sung smiles. These guys had only turned the power off and were latent.

[Please identify yourself.]

“Don’t act so stiff, you sly bastard. It’s me.”

[.....?]

Odin did not understand for a moment and paused before speaking,

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung?]

“Yeah.”

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung? Lifer Cha Jun Sung?]

“Stop calling me. You sound like an echo. It’s enough to call my name once.”

[This doesn’t make sense. It’s impossible! Did the Oriax let you go?]

Odin is stammering. Cha Jun Sung’s survival is impossible. There is the slightest possibility that the Oriax would let him go, but how could he survive here without a battlesuit?

“Explain.”

[In Public Underground.....]

This is the situation. When Cha Jun Sung ran away, the helpers were going to choose him as the subject of a mission. It would be level A since he is level 8. They need to know his precise location in order to create a mission, but it had happened so suddenly that they had trouble identifying his location and they lost his trace.

‘So it really is artificial intelligence? They must not know about my changing since they lost track of me.’

“How much time has passed?”

[1 year, 4 months, 23 days.]

“Damn.”

He had been expecting it, but almost 1 year and 5 months have passed. Since he went around in his right state of mind for about 6 months, he has gone around crazed for 10 months.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung, you must tell us what happened while you were drifting as well.]

“Why should I?”

He came out strong, but it was half-truth. All Odin has to do is

recognize him as a Lifer and bring him back to reality. What is it that the helpers want to hear?

[You are someone who has become a mutant, even if it was only as a host. If you are somehow not a human, we cannot bring you back.]

“I’m a mutant?”

It did touch his conscience a little, but he controlled his heartbeat and did not show it.

Basic medical functions are built into the PDA. He needs to be careful because they measure the heart, pulse, and concentration of virus A.

‘Shall I create a scenario?’

There is something he thought of in advance because he knew this would happen. Cha Jun Sung distorted part of the truth to tell them enough that would not cause trouble for himself.

[Can we examine you in the briefing room medical facilities to confirm this is true? We will see if an infection is present through in-depth examinations.]

“Sure.”

He pretended to go along with them since he needs to get out of here. He will decide if he will properly accept the tests once he returns. If he really does not want to, he can throw a tantrum or something.

\*\*\*

“How many months has it been since I’ve stepped on shore?”

A battlesuit configured in the highest level, absorbs the flashing sunshine. Solar heat is energy as well. This is how it normally goes because it must be saved as much as possible.

While Cha Jun Sung, now mutant, was talking to Odin in order to return to reality, another Cha Jun Sung had crossed the Pacific Ocean and arrived in North America.

The reason for coming here? As he said to Black Demon, it is to kill Evil Queen, whom he had failed to kill even while losing all of his friends.

He knows the approximate location but he does not know if she is still there because time has gotten tangled. He is going to try looking for her because he is just back at square one if he fails.

“If this much time has passed, they’ll be sweating through level B now.”

What mission when he has become a mutant? He has the ability

to take on a level A mission, but there is no way for the future Cha Jun Sung to know that.

“At least... I need to kill the 4 sisters at the least.”

The 4 level 8s that Evil Queen gave birth to with the seed of South America’s Skull. If he kills them, the current Cha Jun Sung’s mission becomes easier.

“Shall I go?”

Cha Jun Sung put the Affiliate Ultimate Hades Blade on his shoulder. He can see a desolate city afar, and it seemed like the city’s atmosphere was expressing his feelings.

# Chapter 159

---

Cha Jun Sung returned to the medical tower in zone A. He is in Mechanic City for the first time in 1 year and 5 months. He wanted to contact his party right away, but the PDA is jammed.

“I can’t. I thought about it again, but I don’t want to. Send me back to reality.”

[We cannot do that. This is not a light matter that I can decide arbitrarily on. It is upper instruction beyond my authority.]

Cha Jun Sung is rejecting the in-depth examination. It is true that he does have something to hide but even if that were not the case, he would not want to go through with it anyway.

“Connect me with your superior authority. It’s troublesome for you to be stuck in the middle, right? I’ll tell them.”

Being in the middle is hard for everything. Most people do not realize that the person in the middle is swayed by people from both sides, but Cha Jun Sung is different.

Odin does not speak. If it is not possible, he would have said it. It seems like he is going to connect Cha Jun Sung to the superior. If it is higher than the helper as an administrator, is it a producer?

[I didn’t know we would meet like this... It’s a pleasure, Lifer Cha Jun Sung.]

“The superior?”

[Yes.]

“I’ll say it outright. I won’t get an in-depth examination.”

[Why not? If there is still an issue left in your body, we will treat it without deducting points. We have a reward in mind as well.]

Cha Jun Sung smirks. Point deduction? He has points in the millions just from what he had gathered before entering Public Underground. He does not care about deductions or rewards.

“Is there a precise reason why I have to do it?”

[We cannot let you walk around Mechanic City like this. If you go wild like you did then... It’ll have a great effect in reality as well.]

Cha Jun Sung smirks.

Is this a joke? Everything has become a mess since Life Mission appeared. The great effect was made a few years ago, no, when the beta started.

“Huh, treatment.... Who are you to oppress my freedom?”

He wants to speak plainly while he has the superior's attention. He is curious as to what the other side is thinking.

"Fine. Let's say there is still a problem with me. What if it can't be treated? Are you going to kill me? Isn't this a prevention experiment?"

There are a lot of things he realized while wandering in the mission. The biggest shock was that the A virus was injected into his body. Virus A was what was spread all over that world as well.

Life Mission's operation – the creators and virus A are closely related. The feeling that it is like leaving a fish to a cat is strong.

"You take people living average lives, give them the strength to fight mutants, and push them into another world that is dominated by mutants... Isn't this What distorted the balance in the first place? And you say a great effect on reality? It's lacking explanation. You don't have the right to take away Lifers' freedoms."

[Hm.]

"Oh, and... why did you put virus A into Lifers' bodies?"

[..... How did you know that?]

There is a slight tremble to the voice. It seems like he is trying to keep his composure, but there was no way to hide the surprise.

No one knows this other than the helpers. It has been kept a complete secret from Lifers. It must not be leaked until the end, but Cha Jun Sung knows already.

“The Oriax and I shared our knowledge with each other when we fused. Looking into this, it seems virus A was what made us stronger in body modifications.”

They fooled Lifers. Why did the mutants become mutants? It was because of virus A. They experienced all sorts of bad things like madness because of that.

‘Are there problems caused by stage 5 or 6 body modifications? I’m sure Odin said that problems arise starting with the 5th stage.’

It was several years ago, but he remembers. Odin had said that there could be side effects beginning in the 5th stage. He is restricted from acquiring information because he does not have contact with the outside. He should be able to figure out what is going on once he gets outside. Though the virus was diluted, it is a harmful substance. Even if no Lifers become mutants, there could have been crazy people resulting from this.

“That’s not enough to persuade me to leave my body here to you with treatment as an excuse.”

[But you thought of it positively in the mission?]

“Because I needed to go here or to reality. I was sick of drifting through the mission.”

[Alright. I’ll tell you honestly. Lifer Cha Jun Sung, your treatment isn’t the main purpose. It’s testing to see what changes have occurred in your body.]

The upper level revealed their true colors. Their intent is not transparent. There are too many secrets in Life Mission. He knows that the goal is to kill mutants, but he does not know why Lifers were created or why they need to kill the mutants. What he does get a little comfort from is that they gain more information as they get higher in level and gain more experience.

Though he is somewhat dissatisfied that it is not through Life Mission. He found them out himself while experiencing the strangest things.

It is best to go at something head to head. Cha Jun Sung intends to tell his party members all of this once he gets out of here. They have a right to know as well.

“What if I refuse until the end?”

[Then your return to reality and entering missions will be limited. We will also take away your ability to be active in Mechanic City.]

Is it tyranny? He was overridden with annoyance, but he could

not blindly get angry. Putting missions and Mechanic City aside, he must go back to reality where he has lived.

“So that means you have no right to oppress me, but you’ll use force to get what you want out of me in Life Mission?”

[We will give you 1 billion points in exchange. With the 20 million you have in your PDA and the real estate you’ve had tied up for over 1 year, you’ll have more than enough to get a level B full set immediately.]

Cha Jun Sung is no longer concerned with points. With a level 8’s abilities, he could complete a level B advancement mission right away. He could gather 10 million points in a day if he wanted to.

“I don’t want to do an in-depth examination. How am I supposed to leave my body to you when I don’t know what you’ll do?”

[Then?]

“I’ll give you my flesh or blood. That should be enough.”

[Body tissue... We’ll discuss it. Wait a moment.]

The conversation ended. It seems he is of a high position, but can he not make a decision on his own? It means this matter is that important. What could it be that they are trying to find out?

‘Hey, it’s possible, right?’

[We’re in a fused state. I’ll be revealed if they take tissue. But if we gather the elements of the virus to one place in your body, it could be possible.]

There is not 100% certainty.

[I’ll forcibly burn energy to increase the possibility. I’m sure it won’t matter here.]

It will burn energy. To put it simply, it is throwing the energy away. They need to save it inside the mission, but this place is much safer than a mission. It will no longer be aroused if it uses all of its energy like it did when fighting Medusa. If they use this, they should be able to escape this difficult situation.

‘I’ll leave it to you.’

[I’ll burn about 80%. You’ll get a helpless feeling, but endure it.]

The Oriax secretly burned energy. Cha Jun Sung was standing still, but was captivated by a feeling that his strength was leaving him. It is similar to when a person is suffering from anemia.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung?]

“Yes.”

The results of their discussion must have come out. He must listen to what they have to say.

[We will release the constraints after receiving body tissue and blood for now. But if we do not get satisfactory results from this, you will have to agree to an in-depth examination. Is that okay?]

“What happens if I agree to the examination and there aren’t any problems?”

[Then of course you will be able to be freely active as you were before.]

“Alright.”

There are a lot of tricks. He can leave the Oriax in reality and come as a simple human, or throw away points and go through body modifications from the beginning again. All he has to do is somehow avoid this situation.

[“Follow me.”]

A metal cyborg escorts Cha Jun Sung. It is special. He would not have been able to take it on even while wearing a battlesuit before, but he could destroy it with one kick now. Energy continued to be consumed even while walking.

[I'm gathering the cells that configure the body. I'll hide in your right arm, so draw blood from the left side.]

The Oriax paid attention to the smallest details. Though they are fused, it is not an easy feat to control cell units. What it is doing now is not really separating, but some degree of isolation. The only place it has to hide is within Cha Jun Sung's body.

# Chapter 160

---

He gave them his tissue and blood. They did not rip off a piece of his flesh or anything like that. He gave a hair, spit, and gave a piece of his fingernail.

Wiing!

Cha Jun Sung left the medical tower. He is wearing the casual clothing that he picked up inside the mission. He had only been bothered to change a few times, so they were ragged and he looked like a homeless man.

[1,091,085,366]

1,090,000,000 points. It is the total between the 1 billion he got for accepting extraction and the 90 million he had before entering Public Underground.

It is good to have a lot, but Cha Jun Sung is still at level C. The only thing he has to buy in the level C store is the battlesuit. He needs to advance.

‘Let’s use the card at level A.’

Cha Jun Sung can complete a level B mission alone, but mutants at the same level as himself appear in level A. Once the underlings join in, a tussle can be expected. The card’s maximum is level S, so he will get the most out of it.

Beep beep.

Cha Jun Sung presses his PDA. He is looking for his party members. Names he missed show up on the friend list. He sent invitation to talk. There is no response.

“Are they not in Mechanic City?”

They cannot be connected if they are in different dimensions. The PDA only works if they are in the same place.

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung returns to reality through Odin. Then he sends invitations again. They still do not pick up.

“So they’re inside a mission.”

If they are not in reality or Mechanic City, they are inside a mission. He cannot find out which mission they have gone into and even if he knew, there is no way to go in and contact them. All Cha Jun Sung can do is to wait quietly.

He was going to call Lim Si Hyun, Han Chang Jin, or the other rankers, but did not. His party members are a different story, but this is the first time he is getting a chance to rest properly. He wanted to have this time for himself. They will come face-to-face

soon anyway. Lifers come to meet even if they do not want to. Moreover, they are bound to come across each other since they have maintained favorable relationships.

Ping!

Cha Jun Sung purchases a battlesuit from the store. He needs to use this carefully from now on. There are a lot of additional functions because it is cutting-edge combat armor, so it will be a huge mess if he activates his mutant abilities while he is wearing it.

First, he cannot change at all. Battlesuits are fit perfectly to the human shape. There is no need to be disappointed. Even if he does not awaken and change, it is possible to reach the limits of his physical abilities. He will probably become weaker, but he would be able to fight a level 7.

It is not good to stand out too much either. It will be wise in various aspects to follow Lifers' standards. While looking at battlesuit features, Cha Jun Sung completely excluded built-in features that would threaten the Oriax's presence.

Who knows? His information could be provided to the Life Mission side through the battlesuit. Odin asked what he is doing, but he just roughly got past it.

‘Suspicious. Let’s stay alert.’

Cha Jun Sung felt something strange in the upper’s actions. Is

their sole purpose really to kill mutants? No one shows all of their inner thoughts. Everyone is bound to hide something. And if it is a secret group like Life Mission?

‘Let’s look into it.’

People have vast imaginations. Lifers had just gone over it in the past, but they are now holding endless debates on why Life Mission was created. Won’t he be able to find something out if he combines what he knows with what their imaginations have produced? There is no harm in trying, so he might as well.

Cha Jun Sung busily spent the next several days. It is crazy. Why is he so busy? He has returned from the mission in 1 year and 5 months.

From people’s viewpoints, he may as well have been dead. The lights in the luxury apartment he lived in were never once turned on. There was no way to assume he was alive from the hundreds of letters and bills in his mailbox, and all dormant internet accounts.

Disappearance processes used to take a long time but as the number of people dying increased since Life Mission became reality, that time was shortened greatly.

The government did not feel the need to waste years on disappearance cases when hundreds and thousands of people disappeared everyday and they knew why this was.

“1 month..... That’s close.”

Cha Jun Sung’s assets are going through an inheritance process under the premise that he died. If he had been just 1 month later, it would have all gone over to his relatives. His parents passed away when he was in his early 20s and a college student. His father was an only son and his mother has a lot of family on her side, but they are not on good terms.

Cha Jun Sung found out how much he had accumulated in wealth, thanks to the inheritance process. Going through this and that, he has about \$23 million.

He does not need if it he thinks about his points but it made him sick to think of it going over to his relatives, so he proved his identity and invalidated it.

Anyway, after being dragged here and there to take care of his personal matters, he was able to discover himself enjoying a peaceful and normal life as he had before.

Ring!

“They never looked for me before, but I guess money really is a scary thing. They’re even giving me a call.”

He blocked the calls from his relatives. He earned the \$23 million through the virtual version.

They never bothered to find out what he did for a living, but found out about his fortune through his disappearance. They now had a reason to show interest.

Relationships created and broken through money? They are worse than close acquaintances. He lived well without them until now, so he intends to continue living like this.

Cha Jun Sung went into Lifer World. Many things changed in the time he lived while forgetting reality. He is not talking about Lifers' abilities.

In game terms, the situation is that he shut down for 1 year and 5 months. There would have been dozens of updates in that time. There is no way he would adjust right away.

“Are these 3 the big changes?”

The 3 changes link through one matter. They are associated with each other.

As Lifers broke through the level C wall and advanced to B, the strong appeared and the 3rd round of Lifer selections began. Level B advancement, appearance of the strong, and 3rd round of Lifer selections are the points that Cha Jun Sung needs to know.

“Taking out selection.”

It is called selection, but it is just an inflow of beginners. There is

no reason to pay any mind to it. He heard that some force completed the mission and not a single person advanced. This means that they cannot advance without the skills or qualifications, regardless of completing the mission. The steps that they need to go through have become incredibly fastidious.

Millions of beginners came in under these circumstances, but there is a saturation phenomenon in which existing Lifers stay in level C.

“A tremendous amount died. Is this really the number of people who died? It’s not a joke?”

Before Cha Jun Sung entered Public Underground, there were about 11 to 13 million level C Lifers. This is from information provided by the World Federation.

It says that over 2 million died in just the official count. It is possible to understand if crazy, but they are all level C Lifers with battlesuits.

As the number of people dying increased so much, the remaining people were frightened and either gave up or tried and chose to be satisfied when they realized that it was impossible. It is possible to somehow get to level C, but it did not work after that. That is why they call level C advancement the magic wall.

There are issues even after advancing. As there were so few level B Lifers, it was a big burden for them to go through the missions among themselves.

One thing changed when level B missions opened. It is that the entry restrictions for force members has gone from 100 people to 1000-person raids.

But it is actually not easy to even get a full force together. A 1000 headcount is meaningless. It seems like they need more time.

“Hordes of Lifers who remodel their battlesuits should be able to take on a few level 7s, right? Will Jin Hyuk be among them?”

Even with the same level B Lifers, there is a difference in strength according to how many combinations there are.

The main axis of taking on level B is likely to consist of the World Federation. It is not a difficulty that can be completed with a party or force. Even the party members will be buried along.

“That’s that..... There’s little information regarding the side effects of body modification.”

He said there are no side effects until the 4th stage so no matter how the number of Lifers increases, there is nothing to get. 5th and 6th stages are possible through the level B store.

# Chapter 161

---

It could be that there have not yet been problems because there are few level B Lifers, but it could also be that the Lifers are keeping it under wraps.

The former is highly possible. People are more likely to make a fuss and there is no reason for them to keep quiet about it.

‘They won’t tell me even if I ask.’

He asked Odin what the side effects of the 5th and 6th stages are to the mind and body. He did not say as per usual. He kept his silence even when Cha Jun Sung threatened him, asking if he won’t tell even after putting the virus in Lifers’ bodies.

If he wants to know for sure, he needs to meet the party members who are in contact with level B Lifers or go through body modification to feel the changes for himself.

Cha Jun Sung scrolled through the pages. What will millions of Lifers be thinking of Life Mission?

[Couldn’t it be Earth’s future? It feels like the time period is slightly ahead, so they’re bringing manpower of the past together to save a collapsing future!]

[You’re saying the virus is forming on Earth? You have a wild imagination. Do you think this is Resident Devil or something?]

You've watched too many movies.]

[Don't strike the imagination. Life Mission itself doesn't make sense.]

[I'm sure the scientists inside the mission have created the ability to move between dimensions in order to save their world, whether we die or not.]

[If that place is the future, we've been infected and have become mutants as well. Then forget about missions, everything is over.]

Lifers argue among themselves. A lot of points were brought up, but nothing made him feel like 'This is it!'. It only went in the clear direction.

Whenever the argument looked like it was starting to get serious, there were always one or two pests who ended the flow. When that happens, they stray from the main purpose to start fighting and reach the point of chaos. Cha Jun Sung moved to a different place each time.

[As a scientist myself, Life Mission's super science can only be achieved in hundreds of years but definitely not in the next few decades.]

[Most people are focused on the ability to move between dimensions. Returning to reality, the briefing room, Mechanic City, or even the store.]

[The Earth now is an uncivilized civilization compared to that kind of science, but what could they be trying to get out of us that they're doing this?]

[It could be that they are experimenting. Things like biomarkers.]

Cha Jun Sung looks interested. This is the most novel of the ideas that have come out until now. The man's thinking is original as a scientist.

“According to the documents from the Biological Institute sample extraction mission, the virus spread violently all of a sudden one day. All of a sudden? There is a start to everything.”

Did Life Mission spread it? Into that world? Is it the same reason they used to inject the virus into Lifers' bodies?

“They have ulterior motives.”

Cha Jun Sung mumbles as he looks at his PDA. He does not hold private conversations with Odin as he used to. He leaves the power off unless he needs something. He found out that there is a superior to the helpers. It is uncomfortable even though he knows that Odin did no wrong.

He looked through various discussions but they are all of the imagination. They will all end as discussions of the imagination unless Life Mission reveals everything. Though Cha Jun Sung

knows a lot, he is just a Lifer.

“Experiment.”

The word keeps catching his attention. Mutant? Lifer experiments? He cannot tell what it is. It could be neither, one or the other, or both.

They cannot dig beyond a certain level because they cannot be sure.

“As long as this has happened, let’s go all the way to the end to level S.”

He started out not knowing anything and came to find out this much. If he gets to level S, he will be in contact with more and come to find out more.

Beep!

Cha Jun Sung turned the PDA on. He checked on his party’s return in intervals. This is the fastest way to check.

“Huh?”

2 of the 4 party members’ connection status was turned on and 2 were still off. This means that they are currently returning.

\*\*\*

A full moon in the sky. A giant mutant resembling a wolf looks at the moon and howls. It is Pennil, the king of wolves.

It is a level 7 known for moving in groups and is strong in fighting individually and as part of a group. Pennil is surrounded by wolves. The battlesuit counts them. There are at least 10,000 level 5s. There are also 12 level 6s near Pennil.

Engines of the hundreds of battlesuits turn on. It is the sound that cars make right before they go out in rapid acceleration.

The number of Lifers is about 10% of the wolves at exactly 350. 3 forces and 5 parties, level B missions where there is no limit to personnel. The World Federation and ally guilds have entered Roaring Wolf King.

The current situation is a confrontation between the 2 forces. Rankers and supporting Lifers, and Pennil and its supporting wolves, are facing each other.

“This is our 3rd level B mission, but they make me shiver every time.”

“It feels like we’re handing over our lives. But what can we do when the points we’re rewarded each time is about 50 million?”

They stay inside a mission for at least 1 month each time they go

in. If it takes longer, they drift inside a mission for 2 months. They earn a lot of points for hunting because a lot of mutants appear.

There is more to gain from completing 1 level B mission than several C missions. Of course the amount of danger follows the difficulty level.

But if more than 3 forces of level B Lifers come together like now, they complete the missions without much damage. Thankfully, the World Federation set those conditions. It is headed by rankers. 9 combinations of know-hows are coming through.

They remodeled basic battlesuits to create battlesuits of their own. Lifers with 5 or 6 combinations have the skill to take on lower level 6, while Lifers with 7 or 8 combinations have the skill for middle to higher level 6. Only rankers who succeeded in 9 combinations take on top level 6s alone.

All there is left to do is to strengthen the combined battlesuits to the limit of their functions. They expect that this is possible if they open store A.

10 rankers in World Federation, 10 allied rankers. That means there are 20 rankers who have entered this level B mission Roaring Wolf King.

Park Jin Hyuk and a few strong new Lifers combine their strength with rankers to take on level 7, and the rest of the Lifers face off against level 5 and 6. Everyone has their own roles. The time where ability becomes prioritized over anything else has

come. Even level B Lifers only have 1 life.

Pennil shows its eerie teeth and scratches the ground with its nails. The nails are as sharp as swords, and etch the ground.

“It’s coming.”

“Ready!”

Wiing!

Lifers set up an automatic cannon with considerable power. It comes in handy when fighting a mass of enemies as they are doing now.

They need to annihilate Pennil and the wolves in order to complete the mission. There is nowhere to hide. They need to face off and kill them all. The end of the other 2 missions they completed were like this as well.

“It’s going out.”

The automatic cannon flames. They thought about using a bomb like white phosphorus from a distance, but they need to know the enemy’s location in order to do that. Level 7’s senses exceed imagination. They can smell and hear things that are dozens of kilometers away. They would be discovered and sanctioned before they could even approach.

They could just drop it in, but each weapon of mass destruction costs millions of points at the least. They cannot use them so haphazardly.

Kung!

Wolves as big as houses come running while getting hit by the automatic cannon. There are so many of them that it looks like a wave is coming in. Lifers retreat. If they go forward, they could get hit by the automatic cannon. They will only take on the ones that get past the cannon.

The smell of mutant blood entrenches the battlefield. Atop a large boulder, Park Jin Hyuk watches Lifers mixed among them without strength.

“Jin Hyuk.”

“Huh?”

Park Jin Hyuk responded drily to Kyoko. He was normally okay, but became locked in deep thought whenever he entered a mission. It is because of Cha Jun Sung, who died in this place. Kyoko nods to the front. The wolves are swarming in.

“Alright.”

Park Jin Hyuk holds up his gun. His cloudy eyes look poisonous. He remembers Cha Jun Sung being dragged into a pit every time he sees them. It is a nightmare. A horrible nightmare that he will never be able to shake away from.

# Chapter 162

---

“Why do I do missions?”

Park Jin Hyuk asks himself after returning from Roaring Wolf King. It is hard to explain clearly. He just does it. It used to be fun when he did it with Cha Jun Sung. Then, he did not ask why he completed missions. There was no need to because he did it for fun.

Park Jin Hyuk sighs and pressed the calendar function. The next level B mission is in 1 month. A full raid will be put together to advance.

Ever since he and the party members entered level B, they refrained from missions. Violet was the only one who went in with her family. He purchased a full level B set over 1 year and 5 months, and had points leftover. He did not use much on expendables, so it is okay. With time, there is no need to risk everything on a mission like before.

Beep beep!

“They’ll be in Mechanic City. Are they connecting to me in reality?”

A light flashed, indicating contact from a friend. Koharu, Kyoko, Violet, and their newly recruited member are all in Mechanic City. They cannot show up because they are in different dimensions. Park Jin Hyuk’s friend list only has his 5 party members. He gets in

touch with other people through their helpers.

Park Jin Hyuk was checking who had contacted him in reality, when his body started trembling. It is Cha Jun Sung, who has not contacted him in 1 year and 5 months.

“This can’t be.”

He believed that Cha Jun Sung was alive at first, but gave up as time went by. But he is in reality? This is something that he cannot understand.

“Ah.....”

Park Jin Hyuk had all kinds of thoughts and realized that he had accepted Cha Jun Sung’s death as the truth. His feelings had been dulled.

“In – invitation to talk.”

He needs to press the button, but his hand does not move. His body has completely hardened although he has the incredible physical ability of 6th stage of body modifications.

[Come to the place we first met when Mechanic City opened.]

One line of text comes up on the PDA. The first place they met is near the mega tower in zone A area 3. Is this really Cha Jun Sung?

“I’m going.”

Park Jin Hyuk went to Mechanic City and called the party as soon as he entered. They had already seen this mysterious ordeal through their PDAs. Everyone including the new party member gathered to the mega tower. Everyone looked flushed. It is a mix of complicated feelings, expectation and worry.

“Is it Jun Sung?”

“I don’t know either. If this is a joke, I don’t care who it is, I’m killing them on the spot.”

These are not empty words. He really will kill whoever it is. Mechanic City is a lawless zone and it has been long since he has become used to killing.

[Everyone gathered.]

Text comes up again. Park Jin Hyuk’s group, excluding the new member, could not take their eyes off of their PDAs. Their hearts are beating so fast they might explode.

[Look behind you.]

The party turns quickly. Mechanic City is now like a capital, with 10 million people active in it. It is crowded with people.

“Jun – Jun Sung?”

Someone comes to them out of the crowd. He is wearing a battlesuit, but his face shows because he deactivated the helmet.

“It’s been a while. 1 year 5 months... Is it about half a year for me?”

It is about half a year if he excludes the foggy time he spent in a craze. But it will be 1 year 5 months to the party.

Tears fall from Park Jin Hyuk’s face. He cannot speak.

“Jun Sung!”

Park Jin Hyuk runs with his arms wide open. Cha Jun Sung opened up his arms as well. He wanted to cry in his arms.

But Cha Jun Sung avoided Park Jin Hyuk and opened his arms to a different side. Park Jin Hyuk looks next to him in puzzlement.”

“Jun Sung!”

Kyoko is crying in Cha Jun Sung’s arms instead.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung told the party about what he went through in the mission. Not everything. But he did not mix in lies like he did with Odin and the others. He only told them as much as the helpers would not get suspicious.

“My body advanced rapidly. I can catch level 5 and 6 with my bare hands.”

He does not need to be awakened or change. As long as he is careful with level 7, he can kill level 5 and 6 with simple fighting. What stage of body modifications would his current state fall under?

8, 9? He could have surpassed 10 itself.

Park Jin Hyuk catches an attitude while listening to Cha Jun Sung. He is upset that he was rejected to hug Kyoko.

“Jun Sung, you’re still in level C, right?”

“Yeah. You don’t need to help me. I can handle level C by myself.”

Kyoko is stuck to Cha Jun Sung’s side. To her, Cha Jun Sung is the pillar of the group and a big brother.

“But Invisible, you stayed in our party?”

“I like it.”

Invisible. He is Greek and his name is Basil Torrence. Black Leopard and Puppet went their separate ways after the level C advancement mission, but Invisible stayed behind.

Basil does not go around in groups because he has a quiet personality. But keeping the increasing difficulty in mind, he cannot continue with solo missions. So he decided to entrust himself to Cha Jun Sung’s party, where the members protect one another.

‘Basil isn’t a candidate for recruitment, but I guess everything has been twisted since Public Underground.’

Whatever the cause, they have gained great strength as a result. He just moved past it because the notebook’s contents are not aimed at him.

They are people who are to become others’ colleagues. It does bother his conscience to take away fated party members, so everything will flow along like water. Cha Jun Sung cannot think of the notebook as something left for him by the future Cha Jun Sung, so it looked like someone else’s luck.

“Now tell me about you guys. Did anything happen while I was gone?”

“Happen? There’s so much that happened that I don’t know where to start.”

Kyoko starts rattling on. After failing Public Underground, Strategist chose another mission and a full force of 100 people entered, with 63 dying. Only 25 of 33 advanced, but all of the party members succeeded.

“There’s a thing called contribution points now. Advancing has become harder because of that.”

“Contribution?”

Cha Jun Sung knows but pretended not to. The story continued. A tremendous amount of Lifers died in level C advance missions and it is still the same.

“We completed level B missions 3 times with the World Federation, and the damage wasn’t bad. But advancing is impossible until we have a full raid.”

“We fought a couple times with Bloody Kingdom while you were gone, too. Likeminds go together, so they have 11 rankers. Isn’t that impressive? World Federation and Bloody Kingdom are the only 2 powers that can attempt level B on their own.”

11 people? Then that is the exact number of rankers who had evil tendencies of the 36 rankers. They are all in Bloody Kingdom. She told him other things as well, but not a lot caught his interest.

They are news, but they are not very special to people who do not care.

“Were there any problems you experienced while going through 5th and 6th stages of body modifications?”

“There are.”

“There are?”

“Yes. It’s information that level B Lifers share amongst themselves. Life spans increase until the 4th stage, but it can contrarily decrease from the 5th and 6th stages.”

There is more madness and the thirst for blood becomes more severe. Side effects intensify, making it easy to get distracted while focusing. One Lifer was killed by his colleagues while going crazy, and there are few people who know that it was covered up that he was killed by mutants.

“Why though?”

“I found out something when I was absorbed by the Oriax, but what the helpers have been putting in our bodies for modification is... virus A.”

“What!”

The party members are appalled and frisk their bodies. The virus was injected into them? They were suspecting it, but it is different from hearing it for themselves.

“You know what those guys said to me? They asked for blood and tissue.”

There are no secrets between them. The helpers would prefer he does not tell them this, but this is ridiculing Lifers. They have a right to know.

Cha Jun Sung’s group kept talking for half a day. It has been a while but rather than conversations of private matters such as how they have been, they are talking more about Life Mission. They cannot help but do so because the helpers and higher ups are being secretive. If they could, they wanted to open up their heads to see what is going on inside.

“Will level B missions be possible between us with your physical ability?”

Park Jin Hyuk’s eyes sparkle. He trusts Cha Jun Sung absolutely. He has not seen the abilities for himself, but it is true if Cha Jun Sung says so.

“Easily.”

If Life Mission is not on watch, he could probably even take on level A. If he awakens, he becomes a top level 8 mutant.

Cha Jun Sung set a schedule. He will complete a level C advancement within a few days and then enter level B. He does not need to worry about gear because he has plenty of points.

If it is Overbooster, the only one among Lifers with 10 combinations, he can take on 1 or 2 level 7s in human form.

“But Jin Hyuk, why do you keep glaring at Kyoko and me?”

“Those 2 are together.”

“Aha.”

Koharu tattled right away, and Park Jin Hyuk and Kyoko blushed. There were signs of this before, and they go well together.

“I’ll call you in a few days. Rest until then.”

“Can’t we do it together?”

“It’s okay.”

He rejected Koharu’s request. She seems to be upset, but it is level C advancement. He can complete it quickly even without help from the party.

# Chapter 163

---

5 days later, Cha Jun Sung easily completed a level C advancement mission and entered level B.

He changed all of his gear with a vast 11 million points. He remembers the combination method for the Overbooster, so he succeeded without any failures. Unlucky Lifers are unable to do 7 combinations even after spending millions of points into it.

Even 11 million is bound to reach its end after being spent here and there, so Cha Jun Sung sold his real estate to cover the costs.

[Sale complete. You have acquired 100,000 points, 20,000 achievement points.]

[Sale complete. You have acquired 150,000 points, 30,000 achievement points.]

He has had his real estate tied down unintentionally because he was drifting through the mission.

He did not need to go through with the sales himself. As long as he puts it up for sale, the helper – Odin in Cha Jun Sung's case – searches for buyers to sell the property on his behalf. He bought as much as he gathered in points. This was the same for his party members.

Thanks to this, his point count went back up to 1 million.

“Whew! Since I’m all prepared, shall I go all the way to the top to see what’s there?”

He is not talking about going to the sky. He is talking about advancing. He wants to know what Life Mission is hiding. Those guys made him curious.

If he had not had much thought until now, it is different from now on. Level B – as high as it is, the more he will be able to gain. He will try digging into it.

[Level B Mission: Blade Weasel Nest] [Goal: Annihilation]

[Description: Africa, what was once called the animal kingdom, is just an old glory and is now jurassic land inhabited by thousands of mutants in animal form. The A virus shattered the food chain, changing the law of the jungle. The Blade Weasel lives in Northern Africa, in the jungles of Libya. It used to be a small and cute animal, but it has evolved enough to be considered a predator amongst mutants... Remove the blade weasels and Horned Tail at the vertex.]

[Reward: 30 million points]

Cha Jun Sung looks at a jungle beyond the hill. From the outside, it looks like a picture because it is the image of the beauty of nature.

“Nature benefits because mankind is in decline. Tsk! We did abuse it too much.”

Even the world that Cha Jun Sung is in has severe pollution.

Most of their conveniences are poison to nature. The world inside the mission will have been the same before the outbreak of virus A. It is just that after the outbreak, the whole ecosystem was turned over.

The hill that Cha Jun Sung is on is similar to a road created by shaving away at a mountain. It is a mix of natural and artificial elements.

Cha Jun Sung looks around his surroundings. It is an open panorama, a location where he can check on mutants from a far distance, and quiet as a first summons area should be.

If he goes straight forward, it is the jungle mission area. If he goes the opposite way, there is a large city. Judging by the size, there is a high possibility that it is home to a level 7 as well.

Woong!

The party members arrive. They see the open panorama and brighten. They seem to like that they are not in a stuffy, closed-in space.

“Mr. Basil. Is there something wrong?”

Cha Jun Sung asks after Basil. His expression does not look good.

“Honestly... There are 4 rankers, but it does bother me a bit that we’ve entered with just 6 people.”

Basil expressed his anxiety before entering the mission as well. But he had just entered because the party members treated Cha Jun Sung with absolute trust and he thought that Cha Jun Sung would have something in mind as well.

Reaching the end however, it does not feel right. There is a permanent truth regarding the first summons area – it is the place where they can choose to quit the mission upon entering. It is not too late. He can still quit now.

“One level 7 is easy and I can handle up to 2 as well.”

He cannot awaken because of the battlesuit, but all parts of his body have been strengthened. He only looks like a human. Inside, he is already in an awakened state.

It would be too much to show the power of a level 8 right now, but if he is aided by his battlesuit equipped with the Overbooster, he can catch 1 or 2 level 7s.

“I’ll prove it to you.”

“Prove?”

There are a lot of trees around them because they are near a jungle. There were those that looked old, and they exceeded 2 meters in diameter.

“I’ll split that in half with just 1 blow.”

“Excuse me?”

[Activate Overbooster, battlecore 70% deployed! Energy concentrated to right foot!]

Bang!

Actions over words. Cha Jun Sung threw his body at an extremely wide tree.

There was a synergy effect of the battlesuit’s functions and his mutant physical ability to create an explosive speed. There are 6 boosters on a basic battlesuit and they increase depending on how they are modified, but Cha Jun Sung’s booster has 16 small ones. Even in fast and accurate directions and uncomfortable positions, the booster’s effects are maximized. That is the Overbooster’s basic combination.

Cha Jun Sung flew to the middle of the tree and kicked powerfully with his right foot.

3 boosters connected in a straight line with his heel, calf, and thigh burst out in blue flames and put strength in the kick.

“..... 10 combinations.”

Violet speaks as she watches Cha Jun Sung’s body move.

Overbooster – the 10 combination method that only Overload knows.

That power was shown well ever since the virtual version. Even with gear on the same battlesuit, there is a difference between strength in 1 combination. The 10 combination method was why he was able to hunt Evil Queen. The other 35 rankers needed to be satisfied with level 8 because they had been unable to get over the wall of 9 combinations.

Bang!

His kick hits the tree. It falls over at the impact. The part that he hit looks terrible. It almost looks like he ripped it apart.

Boom!

Park Jin Hyuk's jaw drops. He would not know if a fly flew in. He can split a tree in half as well, but he would not be able to do it with one hit. The other party members were also rendered speechless by the Overbooster's power. That is just a simple strike. If he uses the sword on his waist, it will become even more elaborate.

'I couldn't follow his movement.'

Basil tried to read Cha Jun Sung's movement with his battlesuit when he ran out, but lost him because of the instantaneous speed that surpassed the speed of sound.

Is that really the difference of 1 combination? Or is it the unbelievable physical ability he had told them about? Whatever it is, it is surprising.

“I love my party members. I don’t drag them into reckless matters.”

Cha Jun Sung smiled and walked toward the jungle. His broad back and shoulders look sturdy and reliable enough to hold up the world.

“I think I’m going to cry. I’m finally realizing that Jun Sung really came back.”

Park Jin Hyuk speaks in jest and seriousness. How much had he missed him? To them, Cha Jun Sung is an older brother and leader who takes care of the party. He is like a pillar that they can lean on anytime.

“Hurry up!”

“Go!”

Park Jin Hyuk quickly followed Cha Jun Sung, and the women chatted among themselves as they followed after him. They do not have any worries.

‘This is a good party.’

This is Basil’s impression. It was a good party even in Cha Jun Sung’s absence though there was a dark atmosphere, but it has become complete upon his return. Absolute trust is not as easy as it sounds. He thinks it was a good decision for him to stay with them.

# Chapter 164

---

The jungle rings with the cries of insects. They cannot know if these are bugs or mutants impersonating bugs before encountering them, but that is not really important.

“I feel this every time, but it’s a little off-putting to go into a mission that’s in a forest with bare bodies. Oh right. The environment itself isn’t compatible with people.”

Mud that dirties the battlesuit boots – if they had been shoes, forget socks and shoes, their feet would have been drenched by now.

That’s not all. Branches and grass obstruct their view and graze their battlesuits. These are the perfect conditions to get skin irritation from grass, the worst conditions for people. Insects the size of fingernails also stick to them everywhere. They look extremely odd, too. They would wave their hands around to swat away normal flies. But when those weird bugs stick to the skin, it would be enough to make someone pass out.

“Ugh... I don’t like it.”

“Ack!”

Violet can be girly too, and shivers at the sight of the bugs. Kyoko shrieks even though they are not sticking to her directly, and sprays a disinfectant built into her battlesuit. There is some kind of effect.

“Blade Weasel, Horned Tail Heinkel.”

“It’s a scary one.”

Violet responded. Horned Tail Heinkel is a dangerous mutant. It is specialized in offensive attacks and its defense is not very good.

Heinkel has 2 fortés. One is speed comparable to Red Heart’s, and another is force that could cut through a large building. The adult standard of Heinkel is when the blade tail reaches 15 meters in length. What would happen if an ultra-vibrating weapon is waved around everywhere?

It will become a rare situation where everything including the self is split in half. They would not come out alive. It is in the top 10 of level 7s. Its defense is weak, but its advantages offset the disadvantages. On top of that, average Blade Weasels cannot be underestimated either.

“Do you think a male and female will be together?”

“No way.”

Cha Jun Sung waves his hand. There are 2 types of points in level B missions.

Equal 30 million, advancement 50 million. It would be

advancement if a male and female were together. That is how strong they are. He could take on 2 if he had to, but the burden would become severe for the party members who need to fight the underlings.

Cha Jun Sung puts his hand up. The party members form a circle. They can sense something moving. Is it a Blade Weasel? If it is, it is too fast. The jungle is vast. Would it be a good thing if they encounter one before even a day has passed since they entered? Would it be a bad thing? It is hard to judge.

Wiing!

Radio waves from the battlesuit scan the field. Since he activated the heat detector, living creatures would leave traces telling him where they are.

“Hm... It’s a mutant that can control its body temperature. It’s not a Blade Weasel.”

This kind of ability appears in a lot of plant mutants. It is hard to find them first because distinguishing them is unclear when the heat detector does not work.

“UV-rays don’t pick it up either.”

“What do you think it is?”

“I can’t designate a specific one because there are too many that

come to mind right now.”

The party members each take out their weapons. They have a feeling that they have been surrounded.

The mutants came here on purpose after finding out that Cha Jun Sung’s group was here, or Cha Jun Sung’s group has walked into a mutant habitat. Whatever it is, it is too late to avoid battle.

“Huh?”

With the feeling like something is grasping his ankle, Park Jin Hyuk looked down at the pressure on his ankle. A tentacle as thick as his arm is wrapped around his ankle.

Ack!

Park Jin Hyuk is taken aback and stabs at it with his gun. The battlesuit functions activate automatically to press down on the tentacle. Fluids splatter and the tentacle retreats.

They were wondering how it got around his ankle without being detected, and it had dug through the hard ground. Muddy water fills the hole in the ground it came through.

“Tentacle?”

“It’s a root controlled by a main body. It is a plant type. It’ll be

disguised among the trees. All of the trees in the area could be mutants too.”

Cha Jun Sung takes out a temperature gas shell. It is a B store item that combines the functions of a high-temperature shell and gas shell, and each costs 10,000 points.

He throws the shell in the direction that the tentacle came from. There was no specific target because of the dense trees, but the gas shell flew far and exploded, lighting a 30 meter radius in flames. Furthermore, the wind going through the forest widened the attack range a little more.

Kyak!

A shredding scream. As soon as that sound shook up the forest, tree roots disguising tentacles in the area flung out and attacked Cha Jun Sung’s group.

Papapat!

They try to whip at them and skewer them. Hundreds of roots entangle to create a net in order to catch Cha Jun Sung’s group. Roots the thickness of a body appeared as well.

Boom boom!

The ground rings. It is not in one place, and they are appearing from everywhere. Heat detectors still did not pick them up, but

they were identifiable because they are so close.

“They’re Eclipse Trees.”

It looks like a normal tree. The leaves, trunk, and roots are the same. But they are foxes that are hiding their true appearances.

Kikiki!

The Eclipse Trees open their center and there are demon’s faces. They do not have teeth, but the open trees are as sharp as teeth.

“There’s no plan. Kill them all.”

About 20 appeared. There are a lot but they are all level 5, so they are not burdensome opponents. There is no need to assign roles for each party member when fighting something like this. All they have to do is kill them as they see them.

Bang bang bang!

Violet’s spear goes through an Eclipse Tree’s body. Koharu goes between roots and makes blows overall. Park Jin Hyuk sniped while in motion. Basil turned on stealth mode and raided like a ghost. Kyoko also took on a few with weapons with high fire power.

Even if they are level 5s, they were attacking too unilaterally.

Eclipse Trees are at the same level as the Caicus. They are in no terms a lowly mutant. Over time, each party member's abilities rode a rising curve.

6 people – that is the number of people in the party including Cha Jun Sung. They are a small number, but they are superior to most parties in all aspects. The only thing they fall behind in is head count.

Park Jin Hyuk and Kyoko have 8 combinations, and the rest have 9 to 10 for their battlesuits. Koharu's group tried to help them get to 9, but failed in the end.

One needs a lot of luck to succeed in 9 combinations. There is no need to mention luck for 10. Kyoko found her own method of combinations while playing the virtual version, but Park Jin Hyuk quit after less than 1 year. He was able to get to 8 combinations because the party members shared what they know with him.

[Go, Clairvoyance!]

Zing!

Park Jin Hyuk's 8 combination Shootskill Clairvoyance activated and each of the Eclipse Tree's movement became minute until he could see gaps that were not visible before.

Clairvoyance uses increased vision and expanded field view to amplify one of the 5 senses, sight, to the limit. It is not grand but it

is very useful.

It's particularly useful to a sniper like him who shoots while in motion.

Tatatatang!

With proper distance support, a small number can take on a large group. Below level mutants become prey even without support.

Boom boom!

The Eclipse Trees collapse one by one. They get 180,000 points for each. The amount that they earn increases proportionally to the rising mission level and difficulty, but it felt like the experience value following the level seems to stay in place.

Cha Jun Sung received 10 billion points in exchange for giving a sample, but other level B Lifers were frantically trying to gather that amount.

Level B gear easily goes over 1 million points. Lifers like rankers save points by succeeding with battlesuit combinations on the first try.

Those who fail in their combinations were busy gathering points. The future is dreary as to whether they will be able to modify their battlesuits and get the gear they need.

Kyah!

The last standing Eclipse Tree falls over. With this, the first battle is over.

“I’m tired!”

“There could be more. Be careful.”

Park Jin Hyuk shook his gun to Cha Jun Sung’s warning and scanned the area with the Clairvoyance. He acts lazy but he also is a skilled hunter. Battlesuit inside cameras identify and search objects. It can tell things like whether that a mutant that looks like a tree, rock, the ground, or weasel.

Click!

The Clairvoyance picks up a mutant sitting on top of a high tree. A weasel as big as a person blinks and looks down. It is small for a mutant. The 7 meter tail on its rear gives the atmosphere that they must not underestimate it.

“Jung Sung, that! Blade Weasel!”

“What?”

Park Jin Hyuk points to Blade Weasel’s position. All of the party

members' attention focused to one place. A brown creature similar in color to bark. It hides half of its body in the large tree and has its tail held stiff to disguise it as a branch. The Blade Weasel bares its knife-sharp teeth.

# Chapter 165

---

Papat!

It knows that it has been discovered, and moves away. It jumps between trees with the speed of a flying squirrel.

“No! Catch it!”

“Ugh!”

Cha Jun Sung’s group activated their boosters to catch the Blade Weasel with confidence, but they cannot make the worst possible scenario.

Blade Weasels live in packs. If they lose it here, Heinkel will find out that its area has been invaded. There is nothing worse than having the enemy expect them in a situation where they need to annihilate everything.

If they can discover the enemy first, they can lead the battle to their advantage. There are countless scenarios that come to mind. They can set up a trap in an appropriate place or throw a bomb into the center of the nest.

“Ah! Damn it!”

“Jun Sung! I can’t catch it! Ack!”

Park Jin Hyuk was only looking at the Blade Weasel's rear as he ran and was not able to avoid a thick branch nearing him, hitting him in the face.

The branch breaks and Park Jin Hyuk does a half turn. He is not hurt because the battlesuit absorbed the impact, but he can see the blue sky.

Papapapat!

Koharu, Violet, and Basil overtake him once he has fallen. Even the slowest Kyoko is not an exception. She went from 2nd to 6th.

Boom!

Cha Jun Sung blocked the Blade Weasel's movement with his reinforced rifle and grenades, but they were of no use. It only put more distance between them.

[Overbooster activate!]

16 boosters burst on at the same time and Cha Jun Sung's body flies forward. But that is all.

The jungle is the Blade Weasel's homeground. It knows the terrain like the back of its hand, so it moves only in the areas where there are no obstacles.

Cha Jun Sung is not able to use his normal speed. He went back and forth between getting faster and slower, and the Blade Weasel grew smaller every time he reduced the speed. He is already far from his party members. Their battlesuits are unrelated to boosters, so they are in no condition to catch up to Cha Jun Sung.

Cha Jun Sung leapt into the sky. He is going to fly. The energy consumption is severe, but it is not a problem because he has a rapid charging device.

“Ugh! What is that!”

He flew at a reasonable height because he will lose the Blade Weasel if he escapes the range of the forest. Thin branches hit him, but he passes by them. The distance narrows once the obstacles are gone. He will catch it soon.

“Huh?”

It went into a tunnel hidden by leaves. It does not matter whether it was just dug or if it was dug in advance. It is important that it went inside, meaning he lost it.

“Ugh!”

Wiing!

Pew pew pew!

Cha Jun Sung set up the automatic cannon, set it to manual, and made the hole into a honeycomb. It is a heavy machine gun that could even get through a steel plate several centimeters in thickness.

The dirt floor might as well be made of jelly. But he does not get a notification that he acquired points. It seems it ran away in that short period of time.

“Jun Sung, did you catch it?”

“No.”

Koharu arrives behind him and looks at the automatic cannon and hole. It is so wide that they can go in, but they do not want to do that.

“How long has it been there? Oy! I guess Heinkel will go around looking for us.”

Their plan had been to search the jungle, find the Blade Weasels’ nest, reduce their numbers, and then face off. Now that this has happened, Heinkel will either let the Blade Weasels loose to find them or expand its area to prepare for an attack.

“Seeing how it was going around alone, do you think it could be some kind of scout?”

It is similar. It is a lookout to be more exact. Blade Weasels establish an order and take turns going far away to serve as lookouts. The one that had discovered Cha Jun Sung's group was the one that had come the farthest.

It was not there from the beginning. It was on lookout in the location assigned to it but came to see what the unfamiliar sound was when it found Cha Jun Sung's group.

“Ugh! We should have paid more attention.”

“What can we do. There's no point crying over spilt milk.”

“Let's get moving since no good can come from staying here.”

“Alright.”

Cha Jun Sung packed up the automatic cannon. They need to establish a base camp. If they come swarming while they are unprepared, they could be put in a terrible situation.

“The scan doesn't work either.”

“Let's go.”

He tried a field scan just in case, but the Blade Weasel must have gone deep because the scan did not pick up any traces of it. It must

really have run away.

Cha Jun Sung left it behind and decided to go back to his party.

Swish swish.

Had it been about 10 minutes since Cha Jun Sung's group passed by? Something slowly pokes its head out of the shady hole. It is the Blade Weasel that they thought had run away. It looked around suspiciously and after deciding it was safe, carefully came out of the hole.

The Blade Weasel licks its thigh. It has been wounded by a hit from the automatic cannon. It is severe because it was hit while going into the hole. This hole does not connect to somewhere else like Cha Jun Sung's group thinks it does. It is like a bunker where they can hide from enemies.

The Blade Weasel drags its injured leg back to the nest. It witnessed Cha Jun Sung's group facing off against the Eclipse Trees and lost the will to fight, running away instead. If it had discovered them before the Eclipse Trees did, it would have mistaken them for prey and gone after them.

They are creatures that it has never seen before. Each one of them is strong, so it seems like they will be a threat to the tribe. It must notify the head of its tribe.

\*\*\*

Wiing!

Cha Jun Sung's group made a relatively flat and wide opening into their base camp. There is a greater variety of items as the store level goes up.

Battle is one thing, but rest is also important. Level B store items provide comfortable resting environments for Lifers.

6 automatic cannons aim in all directions that mutants could appear from. They also installed bombs that would go off at a 100 meter point, and an alarm to notify them of the enemy's appearance. They are being fully prepared.

“We started off wrong.”

“Ugh.”

Park Jin Hyuk sucks in his breath. It is not the worst situation, but it is not optimistic either. They cannot kill as they go as they did in missions of level C through E. Until level C, Lifers with battlesuits and mutants had similar power, but mutant growth surpassed that of Lifers starting with level B.

Even with modified battlesuits, facing off with a level 7 one-on-one is a suicide mission. There is no chance with 8 or 9 combinations, and nothing can be guaranteed with 10 either.

‘It would be so easy if I just awaken.’

One roar and it would put its tail down and crawl on the floor. But as soon as I do that, Life Mission will cling to me to try to test me. It doesn’t matter if what happened to me is discovered if I decide to leave all of this behind and live normally, but it’s still too early for that.

How many top level users are there who have the potential to see the ending of the game? It looks like only 99 out of 100 will give up before seeing the end!

Cha Jun Sung has the confidence and ability to go past level A to S.

That does not mean he has the confidence to fight a disaster, level 9s. He realized after gaining strength from level 8, how crazy level 9 monsters are.

The virtual was a game, so they were immortal and did not die even if they lost lives. It was okay for them to be fearless and treat their lives lightly.

But they only have 1 life in reality. If there is as much of a gap to level 9 as there is between 7 and 8, he cannot win even if 10 people like him get together.

‘Could I become a level 9? I feel like something is missing. The Oriax says it doesn’t know the cause either, and I can’t ask

someone.'

The Oriax has brought Cha Jun Sung's body to its limit and is currently sleeping. It has given over total control of the body so it can only intervene, but it is better to just sleep in that case.

It would have been bored if it were like when it was drifting in the mission, but there is no feeling of absence because of the party members. And strictly speaking, it is not really sleeping. They are connected by the mind and body, so it wakes up if called.

'Let's see the limit to know much I can let out in this state while fighting Heinkel.'

Since he cannot awaken or transform, he cannot help but be weak even with the battlesuit. Heinkel's overall ability is higher than the Red Heart and Twister he killed before, and lower than Metal Giant.

He does not think that he will lose, but it is better to be sure. He will have no choice anyway because it is not like he is going to stop while fighting a level 7.

# Chapter 166

---

A sharp roar that digs into the ear wakes a silent forest.

Nighttime is another time for mutants to be active. This is not referring to being nocturnal. In broad daylight, there is a lot of reliance on sight. But at night, all of the other senses become activated. Mutants living in the jungle were out before the roar, but after, they were silent.

“It’s Heinkel.”

It is a strong roar that induces passing out, but Cha Jun Sung’s group has become stronger. They no longer become disabled by screaming.

“It must have figured it out. They must be looking for us, right? The funny thing is that mutants don’t watch out for each other, so is there a reason to go that far?”

“Hm. The situation is different, the situation. We’re unwelcome guests.”

Cha Jun Sung speaks as he checks his gear. They are tied together by a food chain, but the mutants living in the jungle are a community.

Heinkel dominates the jungle but everyone is given equal residence. Cha Jun Sung’s group, which has appeared in

opposition to him, is an unwelcome guest.

Furthermore, they are unwelcome guests who can kill dozens of Eclipse Trees. From Heinkel's perspective, it could be a challenge. It is inevitable that it makes the decision after seeing for itself. Enemies have come to this isolated village.

"And whatever the reason, we attacked a Blade Weasel. As you know, the ones that live in packs think of something that happened to one of them as something that happened to all of them."

They thought they would be able to catch it, and they would have left it alone if they knew they would lose it. Then the Blade Weasels may not have gone around looking for their group.

Kya kya!

Their conversation has an exact rhythm. It is organized. They are not just digging around everywhere, but decreasing the range by avoiding areas that have already been checked. The jungle is large. It is as big as a combination of moderate-sized cities. It is so big that if they do not know where the group is, it could be impossible to find them.

More than 1 week has passed since they lost the Blade Weasel. They had heard the weasels dimly yesterday, but the sound has gotten fairly close today.

‘What should we do....’

There must be hundreds of them. There could even be thousands. They are hiding now because they can, but their activity area will decrease as long as they do not give up the search.

Cha Jun Sung looks up at the sky. Blade Weasels cannot fly, but they can. They can run away in even the worst situations.

“Let’s look for more advantageous terrain. We’ll go by flying since the ground is dangerous.”

The level B energy core’s volume and output of power is 3 times that of level C. Booster flight consumes a lot of energy, but it is not to the point where they cannot use it because they need to save it. They are fully capable of flying around for a couple hours.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung leaves the jungle. The party members also change to flight mode. 6 rays of light set up pillars in the dark and vast forest.

“Jin Hyuk, look around to see if there’s a good place.”

“Alright.”

They are overhead where their field of vision is open without

trees or grass in the way. These are optimal conditions for the Clairvoyance to perform in. Of course there is a limit to what the Clairvoyance can do. Even if the conditions are good, it cannot properly recognize objects that are over 10km away. It can only detect an approximate shape.

“There isn’t anything special here. Let’s move a bit.”

“Everyone, be careful of flying mutants. You lead us.”

“Going.”

Bang bang!

Park Jin Hyuk controlled the booster however he wanted to. It is his goal to find terrain that is advantageous to them. He has no choice but to look in each place.

They are not very fast. Flying consumes energy, but speed takes up more. 30 to 40km/h is adequate when considering effect.

“Mutants.”

One-eyed mutants that look like pterodactyls, fly toward them. The mutant is level 3, but they flock in groups of hundreds. Look over there. Their view is full of one-eyed birds.

“They’re One-eyed Birds. We’ll take care of them.”

Tututu!

Koharu pulls the trigger on the reinforced rifle. A machine gun as large as a person bursts in fireworks of bullets that are 14.5mm in size.

Violet, Basil, and Kyoko did not stay, but took care of the mutants from a distance. Lifers need to have secondary weapons in addition to their main weapons. This is not referring to things like bombs. It is foolish to go around with just a main weapon in an attempt to save on points.

They do not know what kind of mission they will need to complete in what type of situation, so they need to calculate all cases and carry weapons of all types. That is why there is switching in the game. Even if they have boosters and are facing weak mutants, they cannot go into war in the air with vibrating weapons.

Kyak!

Under the level B reinforced rifle periodic machine gun, the One-eyed Birds fall heavily to the ground. Flesh, bones, and blood rains down.

Kyarung!

“Looks like we’ve been found.”

“That’s expected if we’ve made all of this noise.”

The enemy’s aura emanates from the dark jungle below them. The sound of the reinforced rifle, the One-eyed Birds screaming in pain, and the smell of blood called the Blade Weasels to them.

They are not visible past the lush leaves, but the heat sensors pick up more than hundreds of creatures.

“Hmph! What are you guys going to do from there? I should spit on them!”

Park Jin Hyuk snorts and keeps searching the terrain. They are at least 100 meters off the ground. Blade Weasels do not have a method of fighting from a distance. They cannot even throw something because they do not have arms like humans.

All they can do is whine and stretch their necks to look up. But what is a mutant? They are creatures that stray from the common rules. On top of that, if they are level 7, it is not odd if they do something.

Boom!

It happened in the blink of an eye. Something large on the ground penetrated the forest and plunged into the center of Cha Jun Sung’s group.

“Heinkel!”

Kyarung!

Covered in white fur with the enlarged tail of a weasel, Heinkel looks over Cha Jun Sung’s group with red eyes. It was just a matter of 0.1 seconds. It calculated the distance to jump, and drew out the positioning and range in its head for the last attack. It is an incredible ability that approaches that of humans.

[You invaded my territory and injured one of my underlings? I’ll rip you apart.]

It only sounds like barking to the party members, but Heinkel’s roar is in a language that Cha Jun Sung can understand.

They were right. Heinkel had come because they invaded its territory and hurt one of its subordinates. The milk has already spilled and there is nothing they can reverse. They will face off to figure it out.

Heinkel puts its head down, lowered its center of gravity, and wielded its tail. 15 meter long blades covering the tail go up and down as it turns. It has kept Cha Jun Sung’s group’s height in mind.

Huk!

Ack!

Basil is startled and turns his body. The blade tail grazes his Adam's apple. He had not strengthened his armor. If he had been any later, the tail could have cut his throat.

Violet barely got out of range as well, but her boosters tangled up while she was getting away and she could not stabilize like a crashing plane.

Kyak!

When the blade tail was brandished in the center, Kyoko, who is relatively short in fighting skills, took the blow. A part of her battlesuit is cut and blood seeps out. Koharu is beside her and catches her as she falls.

“Kyoko!”

“Jin Hyuk!”

Park Jin Hyuk saw Kyoko get hit and got distracted. He could not react to the tail coming at him.

Cha Jun Sung hastily pulled out the sword on his hip. There is a glare. He can feel incredible resistance from the sword that has come to a hit with the tail. They are similar in power. Cha Jun Sung was pushed as though flying and Heinkel plummeted to the ground. Neither were injured.

“What are you doing! You could have died if I didn’t block that just now!”

“S – sorry.”

Cha Jun Sung yelled at Park Jin Hyuk. Kyoko getting hurt? That worries him too, but they cannot ignore attacks coming at them.

“How is Kyoko?”

“Her life isn’t on the line, but the cut isn’t shallow. The bleeding is severe.”

Koharu presses firmly on Kyoko’s hip to stop the bleeding.

The attacks that Lifers watch out most for are the ones that can kill them instantaneously. It is all over if they die with one hit. There are a couple things after that, and bleeding out is one of them. Unless they receive treatment, there is continuous damage that wastes away at the body.

“Let’s go higher.”

Bang bang!

They only stopped once they reached 300 meters. It leapt 100 meters – they had underestimated Heinkel’s abilities. They cannot take a hit with the same attack.

“Jun Sung, there’s a cliff at the end there!”

“Cliff?”

Park Jin Hyuk’s Clairvoyance discovered a cliff. It is a little lower than eye level. The back is steep and the front is narrow. It is great for defense.

Kyarung!

“This won’t do. You guys go first.”

“What about you?”

“Look down. They look like they’re about to follow us. We need time to treat Kyoko and set up booby traps. I’ll buy time.”

# Chapter 167

---

The forest pushes through like a wave in the direction that Cha Jun Sung's group moves. It looks like this is happening because of the Blade Weasels moving together on a large scale. They cannot be attacked in a state where they are not ready. They need at least a couple of hours.

“I'll follow behind quickly.”

“Okay!”

Cha Jun Sung put his booster in reverse. The Blade Weasels were about to follow the moving party members but stopped when they saw Cha Jun Sung coming at them.

As soon as Cha Jun Sung landed among them, they encircle him. They blocked the ground and the tops of trees. They will attack him from the top if they see him try to fly again.

A path opens up. Heinkel, with grey and distinct white fur, walks out on 4 legs. Its erect tail expresses its pride and confidence. It permeates various feelings. There is no way to define it with one. Curiosity, murder, rage, surprise.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung, do you have a plan? The odds are not in your favor.]

Odin is warning him. Even one level 7 is a handful, but it is crazy

to walk into a place with hundreds of level 5s and 6s.

“Shut up.”

Cha Jun Sung releases the helmet. He feels refreshed by the smell of grass. Wouldn’t it be better if the Blade Weasels, baring their teeth in murder, were not there?

“You live such short lives.”

Only Cha Jun Sung’s eyes awakened. He turned off a part of the battlesuit’s functions. It is okay to awaken just a part like his eyes. It is okay as long as he does not display it obviously. A bizarre and indescribable aura wraps around Heinkel and the Blade Weasels. Unless Heinkel is stupid, it would have realized that Cha Jun Sung is a higher predator. There is no way for it not to know.

“You’re frozen? Kik!”

He did not talk to Heinkel in mutant language. It is dangerous to leave traces. He uses what he has from an appropriate standpoint.

Other Blade Weasels seemed to show fear of Cha Jun Sung, but Horned Tail Heinkel overcame that fear. It is doing its level’s worth.

‘It’s not working.’

He wanted to make Heinkel retreat too, but that will not happen just by frightening it. It is right to take it on with strength since it is a level 7.

‘I won’t be able to hold out if I get attacked by this many without awakening.’

There are too many of them, though it is in his favor that he dominated the aura. He just needs to buy a little time. He will run away before they stop fearing him.

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung wore his helmet again. The first impression worked, so it will be embedded in their brains. They cannot keep holding a staring contest.

‘Where should I get into?’

The battlesuit system analyzes the Blade Weasels’ enclosed network. It is searching for a gap. It is not easy because they have blocked him so tightly that there isn’t even space for water to leak through.

[Northeast 19.2%, Southwest 17.8%. Other places are under 10%, so those 2 places are currently the ones with the highest chances of escape.]

Odin took the functions in the battlesuit and Cha Jun Sung’s

mysterious ability into account to calculate the probability. Even the higher places did not reach over 20%.

Life Mission officials know that Cha Jun Sung is not normal. Directly? No, indirectly. There is no way for them not to know. He either turned off or removed all battlesuit functions that analyze the user's state. Just physically, he surpasses the 6th stage of body modifications.

There is no doubt that there have been changes since he fused with the Oriax and was released. They honestly wanted to perform in-depth examinations and tests on him, but they have received a sample and he picked up his cut off relationship with his colleagues, so it is not easy to enforce this.

So there was an order from the top for Odin to just watch over him and not to engage. Cha Jun Sung did not think that they would be entirely clueless either. They are blindfolding each other.

[Jun Sung, how's the situation?]

[Not good. How about Kyoko? Are you done setting up the equipment?]

[She's receiving treatment now. I think the basic setting will be done soon, but we're stuck at the vertical launch device. We still need more time.]

[Alright. I'll hold out for as long as I can and then get out. Just

give me a signal when you do it.]

As top level stores opened, Lifers' mission standards transformed from fighting with guns and knives to strategy reminiscent of war.

Weapons of mass destruction are sold starting with level C, and there are tons of weapons that could kill thousands of lower level mutants with one hit. Missions are battlefields where they put their lives on the line. They need to be fully prepared. Cha Jun Sung's group also has powerful firearms that can sweep through a large number of enemies.

"Play with me for a little. Slowly."

Tutututung!

Cha Jun Sung fires his reinforced rifle. He did not aim at just one place. He is blocked from everywhere. Wherever he shoots, there will be a hit.

Kyang!

The Blade Weasels scatter to avoid the bullets. They were still spaced out evenly, blocking Cha Jun Sung's escape.

A thick tree is penetrated to leave a hole in a Blade Weasel hiding behind it. Everything, even rocks, collapsed under the penetrating power of the bullets. Among all of the shooting, a few Blade Weasels came close behind Cha Jun Sung. He only has one body, so

he cannot watch all of his defenses.

“Umph!”

Bang!

A blade tail flies toward him to go into his back. Cha Jun Sung turns and hits the Blade Weasel’s head with an overhead kick.

Its skull smashes and eyeballs pop out. Its face has twisted shrewdly – instant death.

Boom boom!

Cha Jun Sung turned on the Overbooster and flew into the air. As soon as he killed that one weasel, attacks from the others showered down on him. His plan is to take advantage of the gap that formed when he killed one of their comrades. Hundreds of Blade Weasels? There are thousands. There are fairly large Blade Weasels gathered near Heinkel. He can tell just by looking that they are level 6 leaders.

“Ugh!”

Heinkel and the leaders did not interfere. They stayed in the same place and watched their subordinates fight Cha Jun Sung. They are putting on airs.

“Are there really this many?”

Even without awakening, level 5s are just toys to Cha Jun Sung, who has the power of level 7. But the volume coming at him exceed standard value, so he is getting sick of it. No matter how many he kills, they come at him endlessly.

“You’re getting annoyed because the space is small too, right?”

Cha Jun Sung beat a blade tail coming at him from the front. They keep stabbing at him because they cannot whip their tails. A small weasel’s tail is 6 to 7 meters long. If it makes a turn and creates a radius, it becomes 12 to 14 meters. If they whip their tails the wrong way, they could kill their peers.

His vibrating weapon slashes the tail and cuts the body to pieces. The strength of a level 5’s tail cannot withstand a product of super science.

[Jun Sung! Installation is complete! Tell me your coordinates!]

[931.623.551! Shoot!]

Bang!

Before 10 seconds after saying his coordinates, a ray of light from the cliff shot up to the sky, changed direction, and fell like a meteor.

It is a cluster bomb, a missile as large as Cha Jun Sung. It is also called a hat bomb, and it is a wide-range bomb with small bombs inside of it. One of those is enough to cause devastation to the area where Cha Jun Sung is standing. Heinkel might be able to get away, but the level 5s and 6s will nearly be annihilated.

The Blade Weasels all looked to where they could hear an explosion.

Papat!

Cha Jun Sung ran. Of all the places to run, he ran in the direction of Heinkel and the 6 leaders. He did this on purpose.

Kyak?

Heinkel is taken aback by the sudden situation. It had not expected Cha Jun Sung to run away in its direction. Why? Because it is dangerous. Mutants are instinctual. Even when hunting, they go for the weaker side first before the stronger side. This is the same when they are running away. They go for the place where the weaker ones are instead of the stronger.

‘Probability 1.7%.’

This is the chance of escaping that Odin calculated for him. But there is something he overlooked. Heinkel’s side is the worst for escape, but life isn’t based on probability. Heinkel did not think at

all that Cha Jun Sung would come toward it. It is the arrogance of the strong, not looking back because it is full of conceit.

But a level 7 is still a level 7, so it regained its composure quickly and slashed its blade tail down. It has momentum that could even cut through a building.

“I can just avoid it. You try to get away too.”

Boom boom!

Cha Jun Sung avoided the tail and left the area with his Overbooster on 100%. He wanted to fly, but he held back. He could die if he flies now.

The cluster bomb broke up right before crashing into the ground. As the large missile dismantled, hundreds of bombs rained down.

The principle is similar to that of a white phosphorus shell, but the difference is between focus on detonation and heat. They are both the devil’s weapon. Beautiful shooting stars come down from the sky. The Blade Weasels’ attention was taken away by the grand fireworks against a dark background.

Bang bang bang bang bang!

Small explosions going off everywhere overlapped and overlapped in firepower to result in a giant explosion with a radius of hundreds of meters.

The Blade Weasels were swept up by the small and giant explosions, blowing up before they could even scream. There were the occasional ones that screamed, but the sound was drowned out by the explosions.

Cha Jun Sung mobilized all of the battlesuit's functions. He picked out the cluster bomb's drop point and explosion range. He can take it as long as he is not hit.

“How grand.”

Cha Jun Sung got far away and looked over the results of the cluster bomb in his way to the cliff. Flames flicker as they burn the jungle down.

# Chapter 168

---

Notice of completion does not sound. Either Heinkel or the Blade Weasels are alive. There is no reason to be rushed since they will have left them with severe injuries.

“Jun Sung!”

“Oh, that was close.”

The party members welcome Cha Jun Sung. Kyoko is pale and looks at him while lying down. She was treated with medical equipment, but she is not completely healed.

“How many do you think died?”

“At least half? Let’s take care of them when we have the chance to.”

Wiing!

Cha Jun Sung put his automatic cannon down. 6 cannons turn to the direction of the burning jungle. It is long range shooting.

Boom boom boom boom!

It is at random. He cannot see where the weasels are hiding, so he is sweeping through as though sweeping up garbage with a broom.

It did not end with that.

Cha Jun Sung pressed the switch on a gas shell and took a pitcher's pose. It is obvious what he is going to do just from his pose. He is going to throw it all the way over there. They have enough weapons. It is good to save their weapons, but they need to be used in times like this. They are 2km away, but it will reach if he borrows strength from his battlesuit.

Boom boom boom!

[You have earned 180,000 points and 36,000 achievement points.]

[You have earned 180,000 points and 54,000 achievement points.]

It must have had effect, because the points are coming in. Achievement points are different for each. It is because the ones that were killed by the cluster bomb were considered snatched. The vertical launch device is Violet's and the party members split the cost of the cluster bomb when purchasing it. The points go to a few people, but it does not matter.

They are not going to stop doing missions after this one, and they will take turns. The greatest beneficiary is Park Jin Hyuk. He gained millions of points with one blow.

“Shall we go?”

“Let's wait.”

There is no reason to put themselves in danger to go check. The Blade Weasels know that they are on the cliff. They will come search for them if they are alive.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung's group had battled with the Blade Weasels the day before, and went down from the cliff once the day brightened. It was just a day, but nothing in particular had happened.

“They’re just lumps.”

“Gross!”

There were no life forms intact to be found. Ripped of scraps of flesh were just lying around everywhere. It was such a mess that not even the people who had created this mess could tell how many had died. No one released their helmets. It is obvious what kind of smell there would be the second they take the helmets off. A painful sight is enough.

Kyarung...

“It would have been better to just die.”

“Tsk!”

Cha Jun Sung clucks his tongue. A Blade Weasel that has half of its body cut off is gasping for air without even being able to die. They are killing the mutants because of what Life Mission is, but they haven't really done anything wrong. When separating good and bad, Cha Jun Sung's group is technically the bad. All Lifers want different things, but they are killing living creatures in order to gain points that will lead to a better life for themselves.

‘What are you guys whenthat you’re killing us?’

It is what Red Eye said when they met in Infected Tree. It was impossible to respond. No one has the right to kill others, or other living beings.

Cha Jun Sung shook the thoughts out of his mind and killed the suffering Blade Weasel. The party members moved together as one instead of scattering out.

It is not just one or two weasels. There are a fair amount, easily over several dozens.

“There are a lot of points since 6 people are doing a level B alone. It collapses the balance.”

They could each reach 1 million points as a reward if they complete the mission. They are just raking in points. The number is entirely different from when they divided up the points with the World Federation.

“I don’t see Heinkel.”

“I think we killed all of the level 6s. We can check all of the mutants we killed on the PDA. The number we killed reaches 230,000. At this point, it’s annihilation.”

Would henchmen stay in place when the king is on the move? The henchmen will have gotten involved since Heinkel did, and those henchmen screamed.

They can easily complete this level B as long as they kill Heinkel and the leftover weasels.

“It was alive.”

“It must have waited for us. They’ve reduced a lot in number.”

They have been surrounded again. But there isn’t the intimidation they felt the first time. 100 at best? They can take this much head on without having to run away.

Kung!

“It’s hurt.”

Heinkel’s left eye is empty. When the cluster bomb went off, a fragment embedded itself so deep inside the eye that rapid regeneration was impossible and it just plucked the eye out.

“3 level 6s. Most of them injured. Shall we end it?”

The party members took out their weapons. They could do this properly, but will they need to use their strength when the opposition is in such a terrible state? It is early, but the end is near.

“Alright, let’s....”

Woooo!

Cha Jun Sung was not able to finish his sentence. A roar they heard from somewhere made him, his party members, Heinkel, and the Blade Weasels freeze.

Cha Jun Sung looked down at his hands. They are trembling. His body tingles as though he has been electrocuted. His party members shake their dizzy heads.

Kyak!

Heinkel heard the roar and acts strangely. The hail that had been erect hangs down and it runs away, leaving the Blade Weasels behind.

“What – what is it? Is it a mutant? Is it level 8 if it can make a level 7 run away and have us react like this? But why isn’t a special mission activating?”

“Maybe because it has nothing to do with us?”

“Jun Sung, what are you going to do?”

Koharu asks Cha Jun Sung. He could not answer right away.

‘Level 8? No. This wouldn’t happen even if he met Red Eye. This... is a level 9.’

This is Africa. If it is level 9, it must be Cruel King Anubis. A distance that they can hear its roar from. Even if it is far, it will just be a few dozen kilometers. What is going on?

Lifers and mutants alike do not know what is happening. Only the ones who created the situation know. It is what happened in the time that Cha Jun Sung, who had been losing time in his insanity, returned to reality and then heard the Cruel King’s roar.

Not long after Black Demon met with White Queen, mutants started moving from her area of Europe. Their destination is France, with Inferno and level 8s at the head. It was a large army that was close to 500,000 and excluding the lower levels 1 through 4, all of the mutants were over level 5.

The helpers watching over the 6 continents via satellite, noticed that all of those high level mutants were on the move and started looking deeply into them.

Levels 8 and 9 are under constant monitoring. The helpers know that White Queen and Black Demon met, but they cannot know why.

It is impossible to tap their conversations as well. After that, Europe's flow changed and after 4 months, the mutants reached south of Jordan in the Middle East. The Middle East is Southwest Asia. It is Black Demon's area, where White Queen does not have influence and trespassing without permission would mean war.

But White Queen, who was going south, went over into Egypt. From here, it is Africa, Cruel Queen's territory. The helpers identified the situation.

[It is hard to move such a large army to Africa by sea, so they would have had to go by land. What if Black Demon permitted this?]

[Neutral Black Demon has formed an alliance with White Queen.]

[Why is White Queen bringing a large army to Africa?]

While they were guessing up to here, changes in Africa ensured the future. Cruel King is also calling its subordinates to it.

[War.]

It is the single word that explains Europe and Africa's collision. It is the perfect opportunity to get rid of 2 level 9s. It is early, but the

helpers wanted to insert Lifers even if they were overdoing it.

Then what should they do? The method is simple. They can control missions so that Lifers have no choice but to go towards Africa and then block them in. When Cruel King started reacting, they cut off the missions that could be active in all continents except Africa in sequence.

The PDA became full of missions that could only be completed in Africa, and Lifers entered as they normally did without realizing this. The more surprising thing is that it is not all of Africa, but the area that they think has the highest probability of becoming the main battlefield.

That is Northern Africa – Libya, Chad, and Sudan.

There is no such thing as coincidence. Cha Jun Sung's group might think that they came here by their own choice, but they have fallen in Libya, Cruel King's area, because the helpers reduced their choices severely.

When Cha Jun Sung heard Cruel King's roar, 1 million Lifers were completing missions in the 3 aforementioned areas. Cha Jun Sung was not affected compared to the Lifers who had been swept through by mutants moving north or were shaking in fear because they might be swept through.

Their group did not fall in Cruel King's senses. Every single Lifer it discovered was murdered. Its underlings did not have any mercy either. 430,000 – the number of Lifers that Cruel King killed while

going north from its hometown Nigeria to Libya.

# Chapter 169

---

“I don’t... want to die!”

Boom!

A large pillar falls from the sky. The eyes of the Lifer watching that pillar are filled with despair. His body has frozen stiff and he cannot move.

The pillar, giving off a ray of dark gray light, is rough like an animal’s skin.

The wide pillar covers the sun from the ground and crushes the Lifer. He is not visible, but he will have been smashed flat like a pancake. The diameter on the ground alone is over 10 meters. It is so wide that blood does not even seep out. It has just quietly swallowed up a human.

Boom boom!

The pillar goes back up. A lump expected to be the Lifer is squished on the floor. The wreckage also stuck to the bottom of the pillar.

The pillar that killed the Lifer is a mutant that resembles elephants. It is huge, the size if an elephant had been enlarged multiple times. It is heinous. Dark eyes, a pair of long horns, muscles all over its body, and three pairs of legs that support its

body.

It is Cruel King's pet, Hell Mammoth. It is a level 8 even if it is a pet, so it has the strength that Medusa and Beholder have.

Kurung.

Africa's ruler is breathing in and out on Hell Mammoth's back.

Cruel King Anubis. With a human's body and a dog's head, it has an ordinary appearance compared to other heinous mutants.

It is not big either. 3 or 4 meters? It only looks to be a level 3. But Black Demon and White Queen also do not look like much before they are in their awakened states. Judging the opponent by its appearance is foolish.

"That's strange. Were there this many humans left in my territory?"

"There is an increased inflow of humans these days. The curious thing is that they do not go by sea or land, but just suddenly appear."

Cruel King frowns at the subordinate's report. When it awakened and acknowledged itself, it killed all humans in Africa.

It had not left even an ant alive. Where had they come from?

“I’m not pleased.”

It does not like people. They are horrible. Before it became a mutant, it was born in a zoo run by humans. This is a secret that only it knows.

It had believed that life was definite at the time, but realized that it had been repressed once it awakened and exceeded the limits of living beings. With what rights are humans repressing them? It could not forgive them, and made Africa its own territory with this mighty force.

Starting a few years back however, a little activity showed and they were not coming in by hordes. It cannot understand this phenomenon. Cruel King has eyes and ears scattered all over Africa. It is impossible for tens of thousands of people to get past all of this surveillance and enter its territory. On top of that, there are humans who are stronger than Cruel King’s own soldiers. These soldiers are just at levels 1 through 5, but they are not creatures that mere humans can take on.

“What about capturing them?”

“We are targeting the ones that seem like they might be useful.”

Any strong figure is bound to be treated better. This is the same in Africa. It is impossible to capture all of them, so they chose the strong humans. They have no intention to let any of them live. They will get information with whatever method, including

torture.

“Bring me a few.”

“Yes!”

Pat!

An eagle sitting on Cruel King’s shoulder transformed into a large mutant and went down. It is Sky Kuntar, one of its subordinates.

“That’s that... They’re going behind my back? Kuk kuk! I’m the stupid one for thinking of her as a simple female and it’s my fault for overlooking the fact that she is a human at her roots.”

Cruel King grinds its teeth. It is angry. If anyone were to go behind another’s back, it should have been the Cruel King. Its pride as a king does not allow for getting played. Though it is just a semblance of an alliance, it had not expected that the situation would come to this. It is not hard to recognize this as a betrayal.

White Queen’s large army is too visible. The moment it went south from the Middle East and into Africa, it only took a few days for the news to travel.

“You’re positive that Black Demon let them through?”

The 6 continents are vast. Interactions between the disasters are not smooth. Cruel King and Black Demon have never met. All Cruel King knows is that he rules over Asia.

On the other hand, it is a similar situation. They need to go through Africa on land. The female and male have stuck together.

Kurung!

There is a clear sense of enmity and murder in its growling. It does not know human language. It became possible to communicate as their intelligence developed, and they systematized a language of their own. The conversation with Kuntar would have sounded like barking to a human.

Cruel King looks over the endless horizon. White Queen is beyond that. A battle with a being at the same level. Its blood boils.

Kung!

A strong roar spreads out. It contains the desire for slaughter. It is not just loud.

Wooooo!

Near Hell Mammoth, a variety of mutants in animal form are going out into the plains of Africa. There is no order in the rabble, but they are overwhelming in numbers at the least. The flames of war are burning. These flames will not go out until one dies.

\*\*\*

When Blood Lord first came out of the egg, it was colorful and just 200 meters long. It grew to 350 meters as it became an adult. The ground shook even when it moved. It feels like a natural disaster. It is the largest type of all mutants.

On ground, Titan, Hell Mammoth, Blood Lord, and a few others are the only ones that categorize as super large and the rest are orthodox physically.

Blood Lord flashes fearlessly and lowers its head. White Queen, balancing herself without holding onto anything, is standing above him and gives off a feeling of noble elegance.

Kung!

White Queen detects a roar she can hear faintly. It is Cruel King. She is much farther than Cha Jun Sung is, but her level 9 senses made it so that she did not miss her opponent's existence.

Kiak!

Blood Lord's muscles and thorns become rigid in tension. It is the fear he feels while facing White Queen, the aura of a superior predator.

He thought that Inferno is strong as well, but the feelings did not reach fear. As soon as he saw White Queen however, his instincts warned him that he cannot fight her.

White Queen strokes Blood Lord's head. Blood Lord enjoyed the touch, uncharacteristic of a head of Blood Parasites.

"It's okay. Don't be afraid and relax. Cruel King is my opponent. Blood Lord, you have a different enemy. You'll be pleased."

When they were forming an alliance, she herself went over to Africa. That is when she saw Hell Mammoth, which is as big as Blood Lord. If she could not get Blood Lord on her side, it would have become Titan's matter.

"Be on friendly terms with the others as well."

Kyak!

Blood Lord turns his head. Denial is evident. He does not care about Inferno or Medusa, but he is incompatible with Kimeira. Kimeira killed his mother. Kimeira is his mother's mortal enemy and the reason why his race declined. He wanted to fight immediately and kill Kimeira. As long as White Queen is there, he cannot do it and it will not happen.

Kyak!

They can hear the screaming. White Queen looks down at the

ground. They caught all of the higher level mutants they saw since entering Egypt.

She brought a large army from Europe, but Africa is Cruel King's land. If their power is overwhelmed somehow, they are conditions under which they can make up for it.

On the other hand, White Queen cannot recruit troops. That is why they need to catch as many of them as they can. What do they do once they catch the mutants? They make them into allies.

Kyak!

Parasite King of a body transparent like jelly with strange insects inside, injects the parasite into mutants.

White? Brown? Neither. It is a level 5, green parasite. When the green parasite fuses with the higher level mutants, they immediately grow to level 6.

Inferno's group watches the process in awe. They multiply endlessly. Its combat ability is weak for a level 8, but its fertility is the best. White Queen also eyed Parasite King's ability with interest when she first saw him. Was it brought over from New Zealand? It is a very rare species.

Parasite King's body shrinks. His nutrients and energy have been consumed by sustained production. They do not multiply endlessly. The parasites it produces are level 5, but if infinite

proliferation had been possible, it would have surpassed level 8 and reached level 9 areas.

It is just expressed as endless because there is no limit if he gets constant rest. Even if there are restrictions, it truly is an incredible ability. There was an increase of thousands of upper level mutants because of that ability, and they are still increasing now. It is a race specialized in group battles than they are in individual combat.

‘Red Eye. Black Demon’s bloodline.’

White Queen faces Red Eye, who is sitting with his arms crossed arrogantly. He gives off a strong aura even amongst her subordinates. His form is split as mutant and human, but the aura he gives off is exactly the same as his father, Black Demon. Their combat styles will be the same as well.

Is it because he felt a stare? Red Eye lifts his head and looks at White Queen. It is militant. The eyes are full of yearning to fight.

‘Slightly stronger than Inferno, but transcendence hasn’t been possible yet.’

They are just strong compared to Inferno’s group, but inadequate when compared to the disasters like Black Demon, Cruel King, or White Queen.

‘Hm... Quiet. My type. Females should be like that.’

Red Eye watches White Queen looking at him. He is at the same level as his father. The result will already be decided, but he wants to try fighting. But this is separate from fighting, but she is the type that he likes.

He refused when Evil Queen asked to mate because it is dirty, but he would be willing to say yes if White Queen proposes it. The field is better than the seed, but a mutant at the same level as he is would easily be born.

‘I’d like to try riding him.....’

# Chapter 170

---

Red Eye hid his curiosity regarding White Queen, and looked at Blood Lord. He thinks that it will look cool to ride him around, but he will not allow it.

He has only sworn obedience to White Queen. He says that he cannot recognize the rest. Red Eye could kill him too if he wanted to, but it is not overwhelming. It is the difference in strength. Unlike White Queen, Red Eye does not know Blood Lord's body but knows that he does not have the force to surrender.

“It’s too difficult to go on. I can’t participate in battle like this.”

Parasite King made a sick sound and stopped producing parasites.

It is exhausting. It can rest to a fixed line, but he cannot recover if he surpasses that line and it will be as though he is eating away at himself. The feeling is that he is about to cross that line now. If he goes too far now, he won't be able to show his full ability in the approaching battle.

“You worked hard.”

Parasite King nods and disappeared. He is going to go to supplement his nutrients. They are provided with the best environment. It is to maintain their ability to fight. They refrained from awakening for no reason as well. Awakening itself means that they are reducing their strength.

“Kihit! I’m an unusual species too, but he’s really weird. So weird!”

A bald monster goes to Red Eye. It is Beholder. He almost died in the fight with Cha Jun Sung because all of his organs, other than his nucleus, had been destroyed. He has basically been reborn, but his personality remained the same. Red Eye squinted at Beholder and stopped paying attention. There is no reason to talk to him and they did not come here to form ties.

‘He controls the mind? Wide-area control is possible too, right? Impressive.’

White Queen asked Black Demon for 1 year before the war with Cruel King. She needed time to grow the degenerated Beholder.

Honestly, she only said that but she did not actually need 1 year.

Several months was enough, but she planned for a lot of time because she could change her mind in the middle. She made up her mind so quickly because she leaned toward Black Demon more than she did to Cruel King. Her will is firm, so it is better to move swiftly rather than waste time by taking up the entire year. They are not lacking in power because of all of their supporters.

The allies are ahead in quality and the enemy is ahead in quantity. This is inevitable. This is Africa. They cannot underestimate the homeground advantage.

‘As long as White Queen gets Cruel King, numbers don’t matter.’

It is the same in reverse. This is not valid for just one side. Overturning the head in a war is an important foundation for deciding allies.

‘This is exciting.’

Red Eye’s lips twist.

Cruel King is coming from beyond there. The allies’ locations are not moving from the borders of Libya and Egypt, and they are waiting in place. They will soon confront Cruel King.

\*\*\*

Somewhere in the jungle, Cha Jun Sung is sitting on a rock. Someone on a branch, someone on the ground. They acted as if they were on a picnic.

They did not go after Heinkel when it ran away. It would be appropriate to say that the flow was cut off. The mission’s smooth flow had been cut off by a roar.

Considering the width of the jungle, it is bothersome to search everywhere.

“We’re going to quit the mission, right?”

Violet is asking. The lead went over to the party members when Heinkel ran away. They can quit the mission if they want to, whenever they want to.

Point deduction from quitting the mission is tiny compared to the amount they earned. It is colossal for beginner Lifers, but is not a burdensome amount for Cha Jun Sung’s group as level B Lifers. It does not matter if they quit because this is not an advance mission either.

It is the same for the party members whether they decide to continue or not. They earned more points from going through missions alone than they did with the World Federation.

“I’m thinking.”

“Go back. I have a bad feeling. That awful sound is foreboding too.”

He understands. Cha Jun Sung’s hair rises too. When the party members who are in the middle of levels 6 and 7 in combat ability hear it, it will be like the devil’s whisper.

“Odin, why isn’t a special mission forming?”

[Applying a special mission seems simple, but it is surprisingly complicated. It has not been applied because it is not directly

related.]

There is something called coverage. Cruel King or the mutants under his command did not pick up on Cha Jun Sung's group with their senses. This is why the mission is not being applied.

Limiting missions to Africa was not decided by the helpers, but by the higher ups.

They are watching for when the war between White Queen and Cruel King starts, but they have ulterior motives. Just this time when the special mission is applied, level B Lifers with advanced manpower can return to reality, but those below level C must follow the rules and complete it, whether they survive or die.

There are 2 reasons why they are making a distinction between the Lifers.

They are trying to cut down the power of the two forces by pushing with volume, and using this opportunity as a foothold to filter through Lifers with potential power.

True value comes out amidst danger. There is already a saturation of level C Lifers in Mechanic City. 1st and 2nd rounds of selection reach 10 million and the 3rd round is currently increasing rapidly.

If they step back because they dread level C advancement, they stagnate and are unable to advance. If they will not go themselves,

they will need to be forced.

Many Lifers died, but the world's population is still over 10 billion. No matter how many die, the spots will be filled in the 4th, 5th, 6th, and 7th rounds. Even if the population dries out, if they can kill all level 9s and take care of all of the missions, the higher ups and helpers are prepared to push Lifers to the ledge.

To summarize, the preferential treatment is applicable only to level B, and everyone below needs to figure it out on their own.

The helpers have been observing mission patterns for several years with surveyed statistics of information such as when Lifers enter missions, when they come out, and how many times they go in, but they fit perfectly like an answer sheet.

The level B Lifers that they need to protect have an 80 to 90% probability of not even thinking of entering a mission for a period of time after completing a level B mission. It is because their sights have been set higher because of the tremendous amount of points they have acquired and because they rest in order to deal with the pressure they feel that they might really die. As proof of that, there are less than 10 level B Lifers who are going through missions in Africa right now. Of those, 6 are Cha Jun Sung and his party.

Cha Jun Sung's group did not get a special mission because they were not picked up on Cruel King's senses, but Odin would have pulled them out immediately even if it had been applied.

And even if the situation turned sour, Odin felt like Cha Jun

Sung would manage to survive. In the 1 year 5 months that he disappeared, he went through strange experiences that increased his combat skills dramatically.

“Let’s quit.”

“Good thinking.”

“Agreed! Since we’ve seen your ability, let’s do a level B advancement next!”

The party members respected and accepted Cha Jun Sung’s stance.

“When we get to level A, I’m going to use the card to open the level S store. I don’t know what the point requirements are going to look like, but that means we can recover the force from the virtual version.”

Level S. If he meets the requirements, he does not need to awaken. With full alteration of the battlesuit, he becomes stronger than level 8. It means that he would be weaker if he fought without it.

He will think about facing a level S mission when he gets to it. Fighting with level 9s... He has a general idea if the disasters are as strong as they are in the virtual version, but he cannot handle the repercussions if there are differences. They will be killed.

“Card! Jackpot! I completely forgot about that.”

“Let’s go back.”

Cha Jun Sung’s group returned to reality. When they were returning, agitation was rising among Lifers because the number of level C lifers dying in the mission was increasing.

# Chapter 171

---

As soon as Cha Jun Sung returned, he washed up and sat in front of the computer. Before, he would have been passed out for half a day in fatigue. But his body has become that of a monster's. Rest? His strength will go down, but he can withstand several months without sleeping and eating. It has been a long time since he has surpassed being human.

[Large guilds are going crazy right now. There are a lot of places that have reaped damage because level C Lifers who went into missions, didn't return.]

[I heard that one force completely evaporated.]

[The news has been buried by level C Lifers, but many more level D and E Lifers have died. It's not surprising because this happens every time, but it's on a large scale this time.]

Not returning from a mission means that they have gone missing. Going missing inside of a mission means death. Each guild tried to keep their matters under wraps, but that is not possible. Someone who died is someone's friend. Hundreds of thousands died, and this is the first time that so many people have been unable to return since the game was stabilized. It is odd.

“In level C? But there’s no reason to be annihilated unless they’re attempting advancement.”

Beep beep!

Cha Jun Sung looks over level B through E missions in turn.

“There are fewer than when I entered. There were few then, too.”

Levels D and E are as usual, but C and B – especially B – are extremely limited. There had been about 100 when he chose Weasel Hunting, but there were a few dozen now. Level B was small normally, but this is severe.

“Why is this like this?”

[There has been an error, so we are tuning the missions. It will take some time.]

Odin vaguely explained it away. Cha Jun Sung does not have the ability to figure out whether that is the truth or a lie. He cannot be suspicious either.

“There are only 2 advancement missions?”

There are just two 50 million point level B advancement missions. There are bugs in the game too, so there must be in real life. He subconsciously went past it.

[When are you planning to advance?]

“Right away in the next mission.”

[Can you... push back the timing a bit?]

“Push back timing? Are you infringing on my personal opinions right now?”

[No.]

The advancement missions on the PDA are related to the war between the 2 disasters. Odin likes Cha Jun Sung. All helpers like the Lifers that they have raised. What he said now is also against the rules.

[If you really have to advance, I wish you would go in alone. This is all I can say to you.]

Under the premise that Cha Jun Sung is alone, Odin can help him come back alive even if he cannot complete the mission. The minimum is satisfied if he has the combat ability of level 7.

“There’s something you want to tell me without the higher ups knowing, isn’t there?”

[There is not.]

Odin stopped talking. Cha Jun Sung did not ask either. Odin tends to say something and disappear, but nothing is useless. It

was the same with Dead Ark, but there is a lot that comes in helpful if he keeps it in mind.

Alone. Alone, he says? Advancement missions are not running away or anything like that. If Odin is getting involved to warn him, he shouldn't ignore it. Something is up.

Blood Lord slithered like a snake and moves from the head. The monstrous blades stuck all over its body flips the ground like a field. Europe's mutants follow behind. It is not because Blood Lord is the leader. They are following White Queen, who is riding on top of him.

Kirung!

Blood Lord's high and wide view comes from the front and discovers the enemy. Of all of his senses, his sight moves the fastest.

A heterogeneous entity of white, White Queen smiles. A white ripple spreads in her expression. It is beautiful and horrifying.

Though she looks gentle, she is another level 9 disaster who rules a continent. She does not show it all of the time, but she is wrapped in total madness inside a nice wrapping.

“They've come in hordes.”

“They look to be at least 3 times us in number. I can smell a

tussle.”

Medusa added an explanation to Inferno’s dull tone. They cannot get an exact number, but in a space occupied by mutants, the area became so full with mutants multiple times the allies that it became frustrating.

As they get closer, the mutants’ bones throb from the aura of the disasters at the head of each side. Levels 5 to 6 were not even able to show their energy. Even without awakening, their energies seep out.

Cruel King’s side brought lower level mutants in addition to higher levels, but they already felt heavy pressure from Blood Lord’s aura as a top predator before White Queen. Their levels are so low that they are not recognized as equivalent to levels 8 or 9.

“Hell Mammoth.”

Titan is as silent as Parasite King, and flexes the thick muscles on his huge body while glaring at Hell Mammoth. Hell Mammoth is one of the opponents that he was originally supposed to take on.

Wooo!

Bang bang bang!

Hell Mammoth roars and stomps. It stomps with strength as though demonstrating force. The ground shook as though there

was an earthquake. It was overwhelmed by the disasters, but Hell Mammoth is also a monster that cannot be measured in level 8. Simply looking at it as a single object, it has the strength to suck a country dry.

Kirung!

Blood Lord showed aggression and responded. He is longer but Hell Mammoth is bigger, so they are similar overall.

Instinct. Blood Lord could tell that he needs to fight Hell Mammoth even without White Queen telling him to. It is because he felt an aura coming from the small creature on top of it that rivaled that of the queen he is devoted to.

When the distance narrowed to 2 to 3 kilometers, White Queen and Cruel King looked at each other. It is far for humans, but it is nothing to those two. It looks as though they are maintaining composure at a glance, but even their cells have already gone into battle mode.

“You’ve started a funny game.”

“Who would be crazy enough to start such a game?”

Their conversation is not hindered by the distance as though they are in close range because their extremely developed senses enable smooth communication.

Cruel King's eyes flared red with murder when he saw White Queen answer naturally. They have crossed a river that they cannot come back from.

"You pretended to form an alliance with me and are playing around with Asia's Blackhead."

"What? Blackhead?"

Bang!

At that moment, White Queen heard the air bursting in the formation and Red Eye ran out. Insulting his respected father. He had tried to restrain himself because it is not his conversation, but he lost his mind at the word 'Blackhead'.

Red Eye rushed at Cruel King and turned into his main body. The distance shortened in a blink as though running a short distance marathon, and he leapt onto Hell Mammoth's head with one jump.

"Die!"

His right arm changed into a saw blade and slashes through the air. He made a powerful cut to try to split Cruel King's head in half, but he could not.

Hell Mammoth's long nose shrank to be thin and whacked Red Eye while he was in the air. Though they are both level 8s, there is a tremendous difference in size between them and he went flying

to where he came from like an out-of-park homerun.

Bang bang bang!

Red Eye rolled like he was going to smash the ground, found his balance, and stood up. There is a shock but he is stronger than steel and more resilient than rubber, so he bounced off or absorbed attacks with more than dozens of tons in weight.

Kung!

His aggressive personality quickly came out after taking a hit. He raged like he wanted the world to end and erupted in a force that he had never before shown. Cruel King showed interest. It is a fairly strong aura.

“He’s quite strong. Did that bitch have someone like you?”

“I’m Black Demon’s son!”

Red Eye dug into the ground with toenails sharper than blades, and prepared to push from the front. He can go faster than he just did, but he could not. There are sanctions against individual actions. War is not carried out alone. It is done by a group.

“Relax and come back.”

“No!”

“Come back.”

White Queen’s tone had been gentle, but she turned harsh and lowered her tone. Red Eye felt a hair-raising madness in this. Mutants are different from humans. As they are beings that live by the law of the jungle, they end up bowing to those that are stronger.

“Damn it!”

Papat!

Red Eye retreated. White Queen’s chilling expression became warm. She has a thousand faces and no one can know what she is thinking.

“Kuk kuk... You had something you were relying on. That’s why you went behind my back.”

“That’s just a result, but the reason.”

“Reason?”

“I can’t trust you. We formed an alliance, but you still look like an enemy. If I hadn’t done it first, you would have done it to me.”

# Chapter 172

---

It was just an oral agreement. It is not something that they had done in a complicated fashion like humans; through methods like contracts and law. Words can be taken back.

“Did you gain Asia’s trust?”

“I at least felt like I could get back as much as I invested. Oh! You won’t know what an investment is, since you were an animal.”

White Queen covers her mouth with her hand. She is clearly ridiculing him. Cruel King laughed as well. Of course it is not because he finds it funny. He admits it. He cannot win with words.

Kuntar sets down on Cruel King’s shoulder. It was ordered something, but it is not going well. He sent it to find out what is going on.

“It seems we won’t be able to gather anymore subordinates. We have the maximum right now.”

“Why?”

“A large number of humans were fighting with our mutants within a radius of hundreds of kilometers. We killed them as we saw them in the beginning, but there are so many of them and it delayed us so much that they are quitting and coming back.”

They are evenly distributed in various areas and there are so many that it can be finished in a short time. The helpers used useless Lifers through missions to cut off gathering underlings in the middle. They have balanced the power with White Queen. They are right in the center right now, without leaning to any one side.

“Humans again!”

“There are a few times more than the amount they’ve killed while coming north.”

“Kuk. Why now?”

Humans that have been wiped out, have appeared with an important war ahead of them. In masses. He will end the war first. Then he will start cleaning up again.

“There’s nothing to do about that.”

Honestly, he does not think that they will lose in power now.

They normally had an advantage over White Queen’s group in power. They will not be pushed back even if support comes. It is expected that the underlings will be similar when they fight. Cruel King and White Queen are thinking the same thing.

‘The one that catches the other will win.’

Whoever wins, they cannot avoid injury. They could even be sick for a while. They still need to fight. Neither has any thoughts of falling back.

Cha Jun Sung stared at the scene below the hill. It is so concentrated with mutants that he cannot even count how many there are.

He was on his stomach on the incline like a leech, and only held his head out. He is dead if the mutants discover him. He needs to take off the battlesuit and awaken if he wants to live, but he needs to restrain himself as it is not time yet.

‘What’s going on?’

Before going into the mission, Cha Jun Sung looked through the mission list and thought that something Lifers did not know about, was happening in Africa.

Over 30% of the missions were marked in the Africa vicinity. The rest did not explicitly mention Africa, but they are either related to Africa or continental missions.

There was no suspicion that the helpers were controlling missions. Cha Jun Sung chose a mission that mentioned Libya and entered it.

It is the area where he thought he heard Cruel King’s roar. He

came after lying to the party members that he would go through a level C mission. It may be because he has a battlesuit or because his senses evolved dramatically, but he quickly found the massive migration and carefully tracked it.

10 days passed after he entered. It took 4 to 5 days to find them, and he took around the same time in following them. After following them closely, he witnessed a large-scale scene that he did not think that he would ever see again.

‘Hell Mammoth. Huh? Is that Blood Lord? Why is he over there?’

What he can see from far away are 2 giant mutants that are the size of several buildings combined. They looked small because he is far away, but the fact that they are so clearly visible shows that they are so large that they cannot be seen in one view when close. While mutants that are 10 to 20 meters in size look the size of pinky fingernails, those 2 are the size of a palm.

He is curious as to why Blood Lord is here, but he did not think about it too deeply.

He sees a couple familiar mutants beyond level 7. They seem to have different positions in class like humans but even at a glance, it is visible that the strong ones or the ones that look like they would be strong are at the head.

‘Medusa and Beholder are here, too.’

They are faces he knows. They have not awakened, but he remembers because he has seen them before. It is just that the ones nearby are in human form, so he will not know until they awaken.

‘Huk! That guy! It’s Red Eye!’

He is sure of it. Someone who should be in Asia is here in Africa – how surprising. Is this a union of mutants?

‘There are types that I read about too.’

The virtual version had a library for Lifers who did not experience the mutants for themselves, but they were able to acquire information about each mutant here. Of course not just anyone could go in to look. Their ability to browse changes with advancement.

He gained information on Evil Queen from the library as well. Here, it is a mission, but there, it is a quest so he went through great lengths.

Starting with level 8 mutants, it is possible to read about each type rather than reading about all of them at the same time. Cha Jun Sung only read about Evil Queen, but did not look at information about others. All he did was invest library points to find out names and appearances.

‘Blood Lord’s side is the queen with white blood, Lobelira. Hell Mammoth’s side must be the mysterious Cruel King Anubis? Evil

Queen's rival.'

He did not know that he would see 2 of the 6 disasters here. They look exactly as he had read they would be. Both are prior to awakening, but their auras match their awakened states. How much stronger will they become once the covers come off?

The atmosphere seems like they are about to face off. He would be able to get an idea of the strength of the disasters in this world if he watches their fight.

Cha Jun Sung is not under the delusion that he will take on level S missions alone and face all 6 disasters by himself. If he must, Evil Queen is his goal. It was just the virtual, but he has caught her before. He knows the details such as her fighting patterns. He has advantageous information on level S missions.

It is just that what Red Eye said gets to him. Red Eye told him to raise his abilities and go to meet his father, Black Demon. What will there be when they meet?

It does not seem like they are trying to kill him. There is no reason to do so either because they have never met before. Everything, including the notebook that Red Eye gave him, presents questions. It is scary to unravel these questions, but he feels like they will need to meet.

Cha Jun Sung stopped thinking about it and put the battlesuit's stealth function on full. He is going to hide any sounds he makes. All he has to do is fool the senses of level 8 and 9s. Then, all of

those will be limp. But now, he needs to protect his body.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung's eyes turn wide. Red Eye pops out. He is among the strongest of level 8s, so there are not many who can take him on. Is it a surprise attack? Even if Cruel King is a level 9, he was curious as to how he will handle it, but it ended more pathetically than he had expected.

Boom!

He goes flying after being hit by Hell Mammoth's nose as fast as he came running.

Kung!

'He's going to kill. He's going to die!'

Rage is evident in Red Eye's feelings. He cannot come down from his excitement. He is like a swollen balloon that might pop if touched slightly. Red Eye was about to run out again when he turned his head to White Queen. Whatever she said made Red Eye, who does not have the ability to control himself, regain composure.

A strong wind goes through the battlefield. It did not slash him because he is wearing his battlesuit, but the sand on the ground flies.

It is calm. White Queen and Cruel King only glare at each other, and do not act. They are looking for the moment to clash.

Plan? There is nothing clear. All they did was decide who the top level mutants of each force would take on before arriving here. The top level mutants did not set up a plan because they do not know how to. They did not do it because the effect falls and they would not use it anyway.

Intelligence increases with level, but mutants' instincts are stronger than reason. A small difference shows by individual starting with level 7, but general and smooth communication is possible.

However, there is a limit beyond that. Even if they have intelligence, they have not received systematic education as humans have. Values based on the law of the jungle have been established by clan, so they are divided into poles. Wearing shoes that do not fit is worse than going barefoot. If they go at it half-heartedly, they will not be able to use all of their power. It is better to leave it as they go at it with more of a frenzy.

The wind stops and there is silence. Breaking that silence, Hell Mammoth and Blood Lord roar with all of their strength in the direction of the enemy.

Wooo!

Kiriring!

That became the starting point. Mutants run as they make bizarre sounds. White Queen's formation falls behind on head count, but they prevail in quality. The scene when witnessed from above, is one of the grandest sights.

“Kihit! Is it time for me to get involved?”

# Chapter 173

---

Beholder awakened into the eyeball monster. He did not step in to fight, but assists from the back. His specialty is far from fighting physically.

Zing!

Beholder has transformed into a giant eye, and his tentacles become stiff like antennas. The telepathic energy that comes out of those tentacles covers extensive territory. It is wide-area mind control. It is a specialized attack for group fights that he did not need when fighting Cha Jun Sung.

A few level 7s and most of the upper levels encircle Beholder. He becomes defenseless when he uses this technique. He can only maintain it if he can concentrate.

It is released as soon as he is attacked by the enemy, so he needs guards.

Telepathy goes through the battlefield and mutants like a magnetic field. It distinguishes between mutants that can and cannot be affected by mind control.

“Kihahi!”

Beholder attacked the level 3 and 4s. White Queen created a troop of level 5 and 6s to take advantage of this.

It was not all matched to Beholder, but a part is. If the enemy gets mixed up, it is impossible to distinguish between enemy and ally. So it was made so they could measure by strength.

Beholder distinguishes the strength of the opponent he is going to put mind control on by color. The color becomes darker as they are stronger, and lighter as they are weaker. There are a lot of light ones on Cruel King's side. There are heaps. More than half are light ones.

Tens of thousands of red mutants tremble. They are under mind control. They stopped all of a sudden, so the mutants coming behind them could not overcome the power and bumped into them, rolling away. There is nowhere for them to go.

Cloudy eyes become loose and the mutants seemed to be standing up, but they suddenly started attacking their allies. The enemy's center became a mess within moments.

The attacked mutants were taken aback for a moment, and then they faced off to fight. They do not ask why. Killing those that attack them is their system.

“Kuntar, kill that eyeball. He’s the source. Death Horses, go!”

Kyak!

A bird as big as a person soared toward the sky and transformed

into an eagle the size of a large building. Double-headed, it is King of the Sky, with 2 heads. The opponent is the same. The war already started, but they watch each other and stay in their respective places as though they are out on a picnic.

The 4 Death Horses are in animal form but they are monsters inside, so they do not run like mutants but walk slowly in intervals. Then, Inferno and Medusa, Titan and Kimeira went out in turn.

Red Eye tilted his head. Kuntar glared among thousands of flying mutants and watched Beholder. White Queen also brought flying mutants, but they are not enough to take on level 8 Kuntar who is specialized in air war.

“What are you going to do?”

“Go over there, since I don’t really want to fight with a strong one.”

Parasite King listened to Red Eye and watches mutants slaughtering each other in the middle of the battlefield. There is nothing to get out of it. He might fight if he cannot avoid it, but he will not fight a strong mutant if he can.

Anyway, if Parasite King joins, the number being pushed will be reinforced. Though he is weak for his level, he is a level 8. It would be like a tiger butting into a fight between rabbits. There is no greater mess.

“I’ll respect them.”

“Don’t talk nonsense.”

Parasite King snorted and slipped into the battlefield. They have brought him to this kind of place when he had been living quietly and now they’re telling him to respect them?

“Is that up to me?”

He is not satisfied with the opponent he has to take on. He can fly in the air, but air war is not his thing. He likes battles in which flesh rips and bones break.

Kuntar turned in the air, gathered both heads in one place, and fell. It is a tremendous speed. It exceeds the speed of sound and created a sonic boom.

“Can’t do that.”

Bang bang!

Red Eye blocked in front of Beholder, made both of his arms into big shields, and overlapped them. Kuntar did not avoid it, and took it as it.

Red Eye’s shield breaks. Blood falls because it is made out of his flesh and bones. Kuntar’s beak broke and its face is crushed.

Both heal quickly due to rapid regeneration. This does not even count as getting hurt. They each gave each other a hit. They know what they need to watch out for. Kuntar cannot strike out because it has the configuration of an eagle. It can only go out with its beak or scratch with its nails.

Boom boom boom boom!

“I had a feeling it would do that.”

Papapat!

Hundreds of feathers that are sharp like blades, hail down. Kuntar is still going for Beholder. Each feather is as big as a small child.

Red Eye transformed both arms into shield again, and hit the feathers away.

The feathers pierce through mutants. It was normal for their arms and legs to get cut off and in the more severe cases, they died immediately when their necks and heads got cut off. Red Eye is sure.

“You’re weak.”

It is weak. It is only difficult to take Kuntar on because it has

wings. It is a natural enemy to mutants without wings.

They would somehow take it on if they had the means to fight in the air but if they do not, they just have to stand back and watch. Of course that is not the case for Red Eye.

A pair of bat wings sprout from Red Eye's back. This is the benefit of whole body transformation. Kuntar watches from the sky and frowns. It never thought that air war would be possible.

Red Eye shakes his wings and flies into the air. Because Kuntar cannot exert its power, it seems it would become a difficult fight. If nothing else, it can just strike out and run away.

\*\*\*

"It didn't form for me."

Cha Jun Sung mumbles as he watches the bat wings come out of Red Eye's back. He also tried to create wings for convenient movement, but it strangely did not work out how he had wanted it to. There are a lot of uses for it if he can fly.

Cha Jun Sung cannot create wings because of a difference in mutation abilities. For example, the tail forms on the body as soon as he awakens, so all he needs to do is adjust it. But wings are things that he needs to create and adapt to. He will need to be satisfied with things that he can see unless he works hard and steadily.

Boom!

Red Eye chases Kuntar. Even if Kuntar is specialized in air war, it must think that it is at a disadvantage in frontal confrontation and it runs away in the air.

It looked like jets were trying to shoot down the enemy by overpowering the enemy's tail. The flying mutants that Kuntar was commanding were held up by the mutants that White Queen brought, and it became a one-on-one situation.

[Impressive. I'm watching and can't believe it.]

The Oriax woke up from its sleep and admired the scene on the battlefield.

[Are those two on top of Hell Mammoth and Blood Lord level 9s?]

'That's right.'

[The final evolution for mutants. The ideals that have evolved even past that. I can feel the brilliant force that they have through you.]

Cha Jun Sung and the Oriax are one. Therefore, they share emotions but that is what they have in common and the parts that touch them are different.

From the Oriax's point of view, White Queen and Cruel King's strength is so absolute that not even mutants can look at it. It is enough to doubt that they are even life forms. No, they are gods. Not gods that are delivered through lies, but living gods that were born in this land by succeeding in evolution!

While Cha Jun Sung lost the flow of the battlefield for a moment when talking to the Oriax, a giant monster as large as Hell Mammoth and Blood Lord grew, put out its chest, and roared like the sky would come falling down. It is Titan's awakened state. It is so large that it looks like a Caicus has been multiplied hundreds of times. From head to toe, it is easily over 200 meters.

Level 8 mutants also went into full-scale battle. Medusa became huge and pulled out her bone spear, and Kimeira changed into a 4-footed beast with a human face. She is smaller than Titan, but large enough to be almost half his size.

The most peculiar even among them is White Queen's left hand, master of fire Inferno. His external appearance alone told why he is called that.

He is small. Really small. 2 to 2.5 meters? He also looks similar to a human, but the difference is that he is on fire. He is flaming so much with red fire that it is impossible to know what is under it until the fire goes out.

# Chapter 174

---

When Inferno breathes, the fire blows out. He contains heat of hundreds of degrees. It is not magic. He is similar to the electric eel.

He has the ability to ignite his cells and expose heat on the surface. It had been hard to control when he first awakened but after working hard, he can do it as easily as he moves his fingers.

“I’ll take care of anyone blocking the Empress’ way with these two hands.”

Inferno clenches his fists. Before the end of his days, he had been a famous martial artist. He had been lucky and the randomly assigned awakened state he got allowed him to maintain his human form and specialty.

Koooo!

Boom bang bang!

If the first to initiate battle with Dead Horse was Red Eye, the second was Titan. A hand large enough to crush a mountain, comes down on the ground. It creates an earthquake and a clear handprint is left behind.

Papapat!

A faint something jumps out from the foggy dust remaining after the impact. It steps on the back of Titan's hand to go up. Titan shakes his hand to get it off, but it does not fall off.

A sword-shaped tail draws a line up Titan's hand, shoulder, and neck. It was so fast that it was not visible. The cut isn't deep, but the skin has deteriorated and there is no way to avoid bleeding.

Titan hit his neck with his hand. It is to catch the thing that is leaving scars all over its body. But it was a beat late.

“It’s slow.”

It is a leopard as large as an elephant with a spotted yellow hide.

There are barely any external differences with the animal leopard, but its tail looks like a medieval sword. If it can cut through Titan's skin as though cutting paper, the cutting force must be incredible. Just at first glance, it is its main weapon. It enjoys battles in speed, so it is better fit to take on Medusa or Inferno than Titan, but it is not a competition between allies so it is not possible to fight whoever they are most compatible with.

“That should be enough appreciation.”

“I see.”

Inferno focuses on his own opponent. It looks exactly like Cruel King, of course. It has inherited blood from a disaster just like Red

Eye did. If those who succeeded in evolving are referred to as self-made, those like Red Eye are nobility since birth. They were born strong.

Kung!

A gray-maned Tirac burns everything. It is an animal that evolved from the hyena, in beast form. It is like looking at a werewolf.

Inferno did not doubt his own victory and his allies' victory. The Tirac is strong. Of course it is when it has the blood of Cruel King. But they can win over it. It may have Cruel King's blood, but it is not Cruel King.

He is going. He will burn that grey mane into ashes.

Wooo!

Right when Inferno and Tirac were about to collide, the battlefield's atmosphere exploded. Gazes automatically go. Even Tirac's attention strayed at that moment.

A female knight in white armor. Her left hand changed into a large rectangular shield, and her right became a heavy bastard sword.

“Empress....”

Inferno's voice trembles with reverence. It feels like it has been more than 10 years. That image is utopia for mutants ruling Europe.

It is White Queen's true form.

\*\*\*

Boom!

Hell Mammoth and Cruel King moved first. Underlings mixed up and focused on battling, and the Dead Horses took on their respective opponents as well.

When Hell Mammoth took a step, mutants deeply into slaughter opened up a path. There is no distinction between enemies and allies. They will be stepped on and crushed to death if they stay still.

It is the miracle of Moses. While the mutants were retreating, they fell back far from Cruel King and White Queen. Mutants do not have a concept of levels like Lifers do, but they know that these rulers of two continents are like gods who have gone beyond the limits of their species. They do not understand with their minds. They feel it.

The two rulers brought them here in case of variables. The real battle will start and end between the two of them.

“I’m sure we’ll have to go meet them, won’t we?”

Kirung!

Blood Lord sweeps the floor with slow body movements upon White Queen’s intention. Neither Blood Lord nor Hell Mammoth are fast, but they are so large that they can move several kilometers within moments.

Koo!

Boom!

Hell Mammoth’s nose swelled rapidly and hit Blood Lord’s face. His face turns so far his neck could break. It was like a boxer’s jab, getting to the hitting point and coming back like a whip. A few thorns break. This shows the strength of the impact. Hell Mammoth is injured as well. When it hit Blood Lord, a thorn went through and got stuck in the skin on its nose. It is not only a loss.

Kirara!

Blood Lord’s eyes become brutal. It should have given the first hit, but took it. He will repay this debt in tenfold. Right now. Blood Lord’s large and long body contracts and rotates. As his body length shortens, the rotation time is reduced. This gives him an opportunity.

Bam!

His thorny tail hits Hell Mammoth's face. He is giving back what he got. The only difference is that there was more power put into it.

It did not end there. He still has far to go if he intends to pay it back in tenfold. Blood Lord used his body, which is flexible like that of a snake's, to wrap himself around Hell Mammoth. He was not able to wrap it completely because it is too big.

Kikikikik!

Blood Lord spirals and squeezes. Thorns dig into Hell Mammoth's skin like screws turning.

It did not reach all the way to the muscles, but Hell Mammoth does not have arms. It is a tight situation where it does not see a way to restrain Blood Lord, so it cannot get him off in a normal manner. That does not mean there is no other way.

Hell Mammoth swells its entire body with strength. Muscles bulge out from its full fur, and pushes against Blood Lord in reverse.

Blood Lord's body is tightened in accordance with Hell Mammoth's size. When the opponent suddenly swelled, his tightened body expanded and cannot be pushed as if it would disconnect. If he is pushed, his body disconnects and becomes

pieces.

Kyarung!

Koo!

It is power versus power. It is a battle of different aspects from other level 8s.

Boom boom boom!

When Blood Lord's repelling was stronger than expected, Hell Mammoth realized that it is not something that can be solved with strength and laid back on the spot to roll around on the ground. Monsters of hundreds of meters roll around in the middle of the battlefield. They are basically natural disasters that are alive and moving. It is a wide range they are rolling around in, so mutants stopped and focused on running away.

“That’s a cute pet. Where did you get it?”

“What do you mean, pet? He is someone who helps me. Do not refer to him like that.”

Though the center is staggering, White Queen and Cruel King do not sway, switch positions, and do not take their eyes off of each other. They are in a battle of wits separate from that of Hell Mammoth and Blood Lord.

Cruel King's nail lengthens and brandishes like a sickle. It is a good shape to rip something apart. His entire body changed to become militant. White Queen's eyes narrow. She needs to focus. There is no way to know when he will come. He has not awakened, but she could pass the flow over to him if she lets her guard down.

"Let's start our fight now. You'll have to get what you deserve for this betrayal."

Boom!

Cruel King used Hell Mammoth as a foothold and threw his body forward. Those that can see his body clearly are level 8 and higher.

Sharp nails slash through the air. White Queen moved her body back. Cruel King disappeared and attacked at the same time. White Queen's right hand sharpens like a sword. She brandished her body upward. She is going for Cruel King's hip.

Cruel King did not avoid the attack. It has the force and power to cut his hip in half, but he endured it. Looking carefully at his hip, the full fur is standing rigid like needles. He has strengthened a specific part of his body.

"How foolish! I've never seen you in your awakened state, but you dare to get into a close encounter battle with me. I'll let you know what it feels like to surpass human limits."

Cruel King mocked the fact that White Queen evolved from a human. He hates people. They have become the same species now, but he does not like that she has evolved from humans. She has the nature of a human.

Bang!

There is wind pressure. As much as it is the body of an adult, a sturdy thigh hits White Queen's stomach and chest. Cruel King is 3 to 4 meters, and White Queen is just half of that. The difference in their sizes are reflected proportionally to all of their body parts.

White Queen goes flying. She cannot get control of her body. This is not like a body going flying, but more like a missile.

Bang bang bang bang!

She went flying over 300 meters and only stopped once she got stuck deep in the ground. She is covered in dirt, but she is not hurt. Cruel King left Hell Mammoth and Blood Lord, and came down to the ground. He is talking down to her, but she is not to be taken lightly.

“Did you say close encounter battle?”

“As long as I have teeth and nails that can rip anything apart, and a body that can take on any attack, you can't beat me in a frontal confrontation!”

There is a lot of confidence. White Queen recognizes his power as well. But there is one thing that he cannot do. It is a mistake to think that she will be weak in close combat. He will soon come to know what kind of being White Queen is.

# Chapter 175

---

“I don’t know how I appear to you, but I like battles where flesh rips and bones break. The smell of blood, too.”

“He he! A cunning female! It would be more comfortable to be loyal to instincts, so why do you hide it?”

White Queen awakens. Different parts of her body strengthen at her will and wrap her body like armor from the Middle Ages. Her left hand is a shield that is about 15 meters in size, and her right hand is a large sword. With the armor aside, it is an image that perfectly calculates the combination of being airborne.

There are not a lot of mutants whose specialty is whole body mutation, but a top level mutant like White Queen is able to perform partial mutations. Cruel King is similar in this manner. Delving deeper into it, level 8s can do it too.

“That’s not it, but... I can’t control myself once I awaken.”

Kukukuku!

A sacred female knight shining brilliantly as a terrible monster among infantile mutants. But it is madness inside. Heaven and earth flip under the aura that level 9 gives off. In front of an absolute authority that paralyzes their minds, mutants excluding level 7 and 8s stop fighting and lower their bodies. They cannot stand.

“I am a traditional royal of the British royal family. I do not retreat from a mere animal. I’ll get you in close combat that you’re so confident in.”

Boom!

White Queen leans forward and her balance leans to one side. She put her shield forward and put her sword up. She is going to push forward.

“I’ll crush you. A human’s pet.”

“You bitch!”

Kung!

White Queen’s provoking worked. Cruel King showed real strength. He gives off an aura of murder that is incomparable to his son, Tirac’s. A beast with the head of a hyena and grey mane looks up at the sky and howls. The level 9’s roar, full of power, ripples out like waves.

“I’ll kill you.”

“Do it if you can!”

Boom!

A collision between a grey beast and white female knight. An unprecedented battle between level 9s in the history of Life Mission. The one that wins in this fight is the winner of the war.

Bang bang bang bang!

There is no way to look away from them. They are transcends that have surpassed all limits. The battle between the two disasters opened up a new world to Cha Jun Sung.

Beep beep!

Cha Jun Sung filmed the battle between the level 8 and 9s, and saved it as a video. He can divide the battlesuit screen into dozens and adjust it as though looking at several. He is going to rewatch them later.

He needs to put his all into one if he wants to focus on the current situation, so he did not pay attention to anything other than the battle between White Queen and Cruel King. They are at neck and neck. Neither can gain the advantage. They are in close encounter so the combat radius became smaller but that did not last for long either. They collide with everything that they have because they are full of energy right now, but once they are low in energy and their lives are hanging on the line, there is no way of telling what they will do. What is there that they wouldn't resort to if it is a matter of their survival? True feelings come out in the face of death.

White Queen took one step forward, put her weight in front, and brandished her left hand with strength. A large shield becomes a hammer and goes flying. It is a mistake to think that a shield is used only as a means of defense. It is a weapon of that size. It becomes a deadly weapon according to how it is wielded.

Cruel King did not avoid it, but took it fully with his shoulder. A collision on both sides, the aftermath reached all the way to Cha Jun Sung hiding beyond the hill. A living creature cannot do that. That is foul play – no – it is a scam.

Novels talk about having a certain aura, but that has no relevance for Lifers and mutants. It is pure physical ability. They exceeded the speed of sound with just bodily strength and gave an impact of hundreds of tons that covered a constant radius with a light shock.

“That doesn’t fit me. I don’t think I could win with full body modification and a battlesuit.”

It seems they are stronger than the Evil Queen he fought against in the virtual version. He cannot tell whether Evil Queen is weak, they are strong, or the virtual version is a downgrade. What he is sure of is that the harmony with Cha Jun Sung is the worst.

Evil Queen’s offense is incredible, but her defense is vulnerable. That means her stamina and energy are relatively behind that of other disasters.

That is why Cha Jun Sung passed over all of the other disasters and chose Evil Queen in the virtual version. This modified

Overbooster consumes energy quickly. When fighting with level 9, it is a matter of concern to charge the energy.

If he goes into a long battle, Evil Queen is the best when considering there is no reason to hold on and seeing which opponent he could win against within a short amount of time.

However, White Queen and Cruel King are both mixed well for battle on ground and in the air. They are not biased to any one side. This is especially the case for White Queen. Putting up a shield with a calm in battle is an opponent that Cha Jun Sung wants to go into deeply. They are both tough, but he would pick the latter if he needed to choose a mission opponent. That is where he thinks there would be the chance to win.

Kakakak!

Cruel King's nails scratch at the shield. Thousands of lines form, but it did not get cut through or anything. The shield is the hardest part of White Queen's body, and then the armor that covers her whole body.

In order to kill or injure her, the shield covering her entire body must be neutralized but it is not a difficult thing to do. It has the strength to hold up against even a level 9's attack. It will be fine even after a missile.

The shield's center opens slightly where the sword pushes through and comes out. Cruel King quickly turns his body and lets the sword graze by. It is a surprise attack that he had not been

expecting.

Cruel King focused on breaking through the shield blocking him. He has the initiative to attack and White Queen blocked while jabbing.

“Odin. There’s something I’m suddenly curious about.”

[What is it?]

“It’s Lifers’ goals to kill mutants, right? And disasters are at the vertex of that. If they fight like that, they’ll just kill each other. Do you need Lifers?”

Why get involved from the beginning when they can just be left to handle it themselves? Wouldn’t it be better to let them fight it out and then take care of it once they are tired out?

[There is bound to be a winner even if there is struggle. We don’t know who will win and who will lose, and we cannot predict the timing, so we have no choice but to get involved.]

The goal is to kill mutants, but that is not the only result that Life Mission is after. The process is just as important.

Even at this moment while level 9s are killing each other, Lifers needed to enter missions and provide their services. Even if that is ineffective. Odin did not tell Cha Jun Sung this. He eases Cha Jun Sung’s curiosity to an appropriate point. He cannot leave Cha Jun

Sung to have more doubts.

“What. We’re killing all of them because we don’t know who will be the last standing? That’s suspicious.”

[Life Mission is not a forced system. Lifers enter missions on their own will, so they do not need to enter if they do not want to.]

# Chapter 176

---

[We pay for the labor you provide. Whatever it is, whether it is money, there is a give and take.]

Cha Jun Sung cannot refute Odin's logic. Even if they are as sneaky as he thinks they are, those words are the truth. Lifers are the ones who make the choices regarding Life Mission, whether they live or die.

There are people who were unable to endure the aftereffects of the mission, and completely returned to life in reality. They can live comfortably with the points they have saved up. Since they quit Life Mission, there is no reason for them to care what is going on inside the game. Give up if you don't like it, is the helpers' stance.

Cha Jun Sung decided to just pass over this issue. It will not be resolved by arguing over it, and he has no thoughts of giving up any time soon.

Boom boom boom boom!

As he was talking to Odin, White Queen and Cruel King continued fighting. It has not been long since they started fighting, so they are at their peaks. The level 8s are doing their best as well. If he can take all of this to reality, it will become a great help. He is basically risking his life to film this. If he is discovered, he could die.

Bang bang bang bang!

“The pattern changed. Huh? Huh? What? Don’t come this way. Go away!”

The battle changed. It is still close range, but the battle range expanded. They are using their heads to reduce the damages and increase gains. Cruel King focused on defense to minimize being wounded, and White Queen withstood attacks like a mountain and became aggressive by using her sword as a shield. They supplemented the parts they fell short in. He thought he had avoided the expanding combat range, but the mutants were looking for an escape route and gathered in a forest across from the hill Cha Jun Sung was on.

“Damn it!”

Cha Jun Sung looks behind him. There is a place to hide if he retreats a few kilometers. He wondered whether he should hide or not, but decided to stay in place.

A tremendous number of mutants are coming at him, but not a single one is fine. Most are levels 1 and 2, and the middle and higher level ones have less influence. The level 7s do their level worth and withstand the attacks without retreating much. He can handle as much.

Ping!

Cha Jun Sung took a robot camera out of his space compression bag, set it up unattended shooting on his subjects, and flew into the air. It is a cheap item. He had purchased it thinking that he might need it in the future and left it, but he didn't think he would end up using it like this. The robot camera films battles through dozens of lenses. Cha Jun Sung has the first part. He can film the rest with that.

Cha Jun Sung retreated from the hill and then installed an automatic cannon. He has plenty of ammunition. If he does not let it crash, it will kill mutants until it runs out of ammunition. Cha Jun Sung took out a reinforced rifle and periodic machine gun as well. This is the base. He will stop them from a distance.

“The other guys won’t be able to come here, so I’ll hold you off.”

He is talking about Lifers and top level mutants. As long as there is no external interference, he can protect himself even if he needs to run away.

“Come!”

The automatic cannon and reinforced rifle attack incoming mutants randomly. There is no reason to aim anywhere specific. If he pulls the trigger in a general area, any one of the mutants is shot and falls back. When the levels 1 to 2 stick together a few are shot at the same time. Middle and high class mutants were also wounded so badly they could not regenerate, and fell back.

[Establishment of special mission activation conditions.]

[Level B Advancement Mission: Restriction Line] [Goal: Annihilation]

[Description: Mutants are escaping the battlefield to avoid becoming collateral in the fight between White Queen and Cruel King. The creatures living in Africa and Europe include the elite of competent creatures. Reducing the numbers will help with the cleanup that is sure to follow. This is a personal mission given to Lifer Cha Jun Sung, so make your current location the restriction line and annihilate all of the mutants that push through this way.]  
[Reward: 50,000,000 points. Lucky box.]

Cha Jun Sung was not surprised even though he had gotten a special mission, and a level B advancement mission at that. There are a lot of mutants, but not so many that he would not be able to handle it.

The only unexpected aspect is that is it a personal mission. Is it because he entered alone?

Boom boom!

Bombs detonate and kill dozens of mutants at a time. There is only so much he can do to guard the restriction line with just a gun. A wide-range attack is best to create a large impact. He wanted to use white phosphorus shells and cluster bombs if he could, but he does not have the launchers.

Click!

Cha Jun Sung quickly changed the reinforced rifle's magazine. The ammunition for the automatic cannon is attached in a line, so it will keep firing until it runs out of ammunition even if he does not keep loading it up. It was taking care of 500 mutants per minute. Though the mutants are lower level, it is not easy to guard the restriction line. No matter how strong Cha Jun Sung is, he only has 2 hands. It is inevitable that he is pushed back.

“Ah, I don't know. We'll see how it works out.”

Cha Jun Sung took out a cluster bomb. It is something that all of the party members bought one or two of, but they have not tried using it yet. He is going to do something a little crazy.

The cluster bomb rolls on the ground. Cha Jun Sung recovered his automatic cannon and dropped a gas shell next to the cluster bomb.

Then he ran for his life. He does not know whether it will detonate or not without firing it. He has never tried it before. That is why this is crazy. Who would set that off on the ground and run away? Cha Jun Sung's brain structure has turned strange while going through missions.

[Strengthen battlesuit outer armor! Overbooster in full operation! Expected radius of explosion 350 to 400 meters. Countdown 10, 5, 3, 2, 1. Prepare for impact!]

Bang!

Bang bang bang bang!

It exploded. Cha Jun Sung ran and soared into the sky. Since it exploded below, the entire ground became a full storm of dust.

The power of the cluster bomb going off in one place instead of scattering was incredible. Mutants trying to get past the restriction line disappeared as they dissolved into particles. So many points came in it was impossible to count how many had died.

It would be better to see the total count later. A mushroom cloud grows larger with the cluster bomb's explosion as it sucks in the surrounding air. The nearby area becomes a vacuum. It is so large that it is visible from dozens of kilometers away. How much more intensified would it be for mutants nearby? The attention of mutants and Lifers alike went to the explosion radius.

A bullet penetrates the head of a mutant that is barely breathing. The last, so one of thousands of mutants, collapsed.

“How is that.....”

“Incredible.”

A 100 person full force watches the mushroom cloud over them. It is too far for a human to see clearly, but it was made possible by the telescope built into their battlesuits. A fair amount of time has passed since they entered, but they witnessed the scene toward the

end of their mission. An explosion so great they can see it from far away. It is without a doubt a trace left by levels C and B Lifers.

“I don’t understand.”

“It seems most of the focus was on Africa. We’re also encountering an abnormally large amount of Lifers... We’ll know for sure once we go back to reality.”

Like Cha Jun Sung, these Lifers got the vague idea that the mission was focused on Africa. There were a lot of Lifers they ran into while wandering around as well. This world is a giant mission area. Each of their missions are different, but there is a chance that they will run into each other because they are linked. But it was once in a while and impossible to run into each other several times in a few days.

During the 2 weeks they went through this level C mission, they passed 11 Lifer crowds. Normally, this would never happen. When they go back to reality, there will be debates surrounding this phenomenon. They asked their helpers, but the helpers remained consistently silent. There is no reason for the World Federation or guilds to go through great lengths to find out what is going on. They can draw a plausible picture by combining the bits and pieces of information that Lifers offer up.

“What would you like to do? Would you like to go?”

“I would go if it were close, but it’s so far I don’t want to. Let’s just go back since we’ve completed our mission. Unnecessary

curiosity doesn't do any good for our life spans."

He decided to forget about the mushroom cloud with the far distance with an excuse. Nothing will happen because they did not go see what that is about. It is best just to do what they came to do. They went back without regrets, but they were not the only Lifers who had seen the mushroom cloud. They were just a few, the tip of the iceberg.

A few chose to return as well, but Lifers who were relatively close, overridden with curiosity, or confident in their abilities left their mission areas to check on what happened. The number of these people were in the hundreds of thousands, so additional special missions were created. Of course the Lifers would not know what they had seen and what they would experience until they got within proximity.

# Chapter 177

---

Kaooo!

The mutants' war stopped for a moment. Those evolved from animals like Cruel King and Tirac did not know what was going on, but those who used to be human like White Queen knew that was the result of a strong bomb. Black dust covers the mutants though they are not harmed because they were not under direct impact of the explosion.

“Did the strange humans come all the way here? It’s dangerous.”

White Queen spoke as she looked at the mushroom cloud. She cannot see it in a positive light. She knows well what science is. If a weapon of nuclear strength had gone off near them, a portion of them would have completely evaporated and they, excluding some of the mutants, would not be able to avoid annihilation.

That is why she is saying it is dangerous. The strange humans who had started to appear became stronger little by little and showed up with strange weapons. She does not know whether they have nuclear weapons, but she cannot be sure that they don’t from the way they act either. That is why she had been watching them, but they are so close. Could they be using a special means of transportation? They pop up randomly and she cannot guess where and how they will show up.

“You’re distracted by something like a fire? You’re a dumb female!”

Cruel King thought White Queen was distracted. He went behind her shield and kicked her unprotected stomach.

White Queen's hip bends like a bow under attack of this powerful middle kick.

Her rib must have pierced an organ, because blood is coming out of her mouth. However, her expression does not show that she is feeling overwhelmed.

"Just a fire? Ho ho! That's why I say you're a mere animal. There is a reason why you were ruled over by humans."

She straightens her back and turns. Her shield and Cruel King are opposite each other, a location that cannot be hit.

Bang!

White Queen rotated her body and hit Cruel King, who had gone to the other side. She has used a backspin blow.

She had pretended to be off guard to take a hit before landing a blow. It wasn't a resolution to give a little skin and take a bone, but she left a greater wound than she was given. Cruel King draws a long parabola from the first hit point and flies. There is a reason for why White Queen is doing this. Fighting with Cruel King is level pegging. If their abilities are similar, their mental attitudes are what is important.

“I’ll take the win even if I lose my arms and legs.”

Bang bang bang bang!

Cruel King flounders in the air, rolls on the ground, and stops when he hits a tree nearby. The tree broke from the trunk.

Cruel King shakes his head. His brain shook from the strike. It seems he has taken quite a hit because he stumbles as though he is drunk.

“Lance charge!”

White Queen changes to a black spear and charges forward. It is a weapon that Europe’s horsemen used to maximize penetration. She may not be able to kill him, but this is an opportunity to try. It is better than not having the chance. Who knows? He might die with this attack.

“You dare look down on me! You think you’re the only one who can do that?”

Cruel King does not avoid White Queen’s lance charge, and instead takes it in with his body. The spear goes through his chest. The attack from Cruel King’s nails had no effect because it was blocked by the outer shield. White Queen saw the gains.

White Queen saw that her attack succeeded and was going to retreat. But Cruel King smiled ominously from next to her shield.

She was about to shake him off with a bad feeling, but his neck grew like a snake and he bit White Queen's shoulder and neck whole. It is not over.

The teeth he is biting with grew longer, going through the skin and coming out. It is a secondary attack. There is no way to say who was more harmed.

Bang bang!

White Queen pushed her shield and shook Cruel King off. A huge chunk of her skin fell off from her shoulder, and blood flowed. A few hours have passed since they started fighting, but they still have plenty left in them. It could take a few days before there is a winner, but it does not matter as long as she wins.

Kyak!

A powerful scream penetrates the battlefield. White Queen and Cruel King look at where the sound came from. It is the scream of a mutant that is worth reacting to.

The roaring fire goes out and Inferno's smooth left arm goes through the stomach of the Tirac that is much bigger than he is. It is melting. His strength is focused in his left arm, going through his skin and muscle to grab the Tirac's center.

Inferno lost his right arm and most of his strength, but knocked Cruel King's son down on his own. No, he will be able to knock it out soon.

“Kyak! No!”

Inferno takes out Tirac's heart. Its heart is in the pit of its stomach. It is the size of a young child's fist. It was incredibly small compared to its size.

Cruel King is devastated not just because he cares about his son, Tirac, but also because the flow of the battlefield will lean toward the enemy if Tirac dies.

It doesn't matter if the underlings die. What they need to block at all costs are the deaths of Dead Horse for Cruel King and Inferno for White Queen. While both of their attentions were taken away, they faced the battlefield and examined the situation. Their subordinates' battle is coming to an end. Medusa must have won because she has come down from her awakened state and is lying down. She is not moving, but she is living and her body goes up and down. Kimera lost with his body in pieces, and Titan must have tied. Overall, it is not that bad.

Inferno and Medusa exchange looks, moving their tired bodies away. It is not over. They need to kill Dead Horse, who is still alive.

Koo!

Kyararak!

Hell Mammoth and Blood Lord's battle becomes more fierce. They are most visible because they are so large. That side needs to be handled as well.

\*\*\*

Ping!

Something is falling from the sky. It is crashing to be more precise. It looks like an eagle – Sky Kuntar, Red Eye's opponent.

Ha ha ha!

Red Eye laughs crazily and follows after Kuntar as he falls. Then as soon as Kuntar lands, he comes down on it. Kuntar's stomach explodes under the pressure and organs scatter out. Kuntar's eyes roll back. Even if he can regenerate rapidly, pain is pain.

Red Eye's hand becomes a hook and starts digging at Kuntar. He had a hard time catching up to Kuntar, but Kuntar doesn't know what a full body transformation type is like.

"If you only run away, you're just bound to get caught. That's the cause of your defeat."

Kuntar would have died faster if they had faced off properly, but running away does not help in battle at all. Completely retreating is different, but running away out of fear of frontal confrontation is stupid.

Red Eye looks around before killing Kuntar. His level 8 abilities help him evaluate the situation on the battlefield. His allies have the advantage.

Inferno and Medusa are moving. If he joins them and they take care of the remaining enemies, they will have created the conditions to help White Queen.

“What? You want to be parasitic?”

“No. I don’t like the way he looks. I like having arms and legs.”

Parasite King has nothing to do because the mutants ran away, so he is killing time in a quiet place. He seems to have no intention of fighting.

Red Eye gestures to Kuntar and asks Parasite King what he wants to do. Kuntar lost to him, but it is a strong mutant. If Parasite King takes over, he becomes stronger.

“Arms and legs?”

The only top level mutants with arms and legs right now is Cruel King. The rest do not have the desired conditions. Does he want to

take him?

“You’re not thinking of going into him, are you?”

Red Eye gestures to the gold fox fighting White Queen, Cruel King.

“It’s optimal.”

“Hah!”

He is saying that he will if he can. Taking over Cruel King? Does he need to stop this or not? If Parasite King succeeds, he will become stronger than himself. One Disaster dies and another is born. He does not know if Parasite King will get to use all of Cruel King’s abilities, but he will certainly surpass a Disaster’s limits.

Red Eye adjusts his finger and stabs Kuntar. Dozens, hundreds, thousands of attacks devastate a powerless body. Kuntar does not rebel.

“Should I leave those guys to them and go to him? Follow me.”

Parasite King follows Red Eye with an expressionless face. He is going to Blood Lord’s battlefield. He is thinking of taking care of them one by one.

‘I can’t tell what this guy wants.’

Red Eye is curious as to what is going on inside Parasite King's mind. Parasite King has a quiet personality, so there is no way to know what he is thinking.

What he knows for certain is that he is not ill natured? The instinct of parasitic mutants is to take over strong bodies to become perfect.

Cruel King is an obvious opponent if he is following his instincts.

'No one is right. If this guy takes over Cruel King, recovers, and changes his mind, it'll become a big problem.'

With Parasite King's strength, he can recover nutrients and stamina to an extent.

Parasite King watches Cruel King's state as he moves. He is only worth the nutrients if he dies. He needs to take advantage of the situation before then. Red Eye saw this and pretended not to notice.

'Do what you want. I'm sure White Queen will take care of it if something goes wrong.'

He promised him a good host when he brought him. He had not said that it would be something at the same level as his father, but he will keep his promise.

# Chapter 178

---

White Queen and Cruel King's battle reaches its climax. No one can even think of interfering. Dead Horse was assigned to Inferno and Medusa, so they go after him since their battles are over. They are both wounded. It is not to the point where they are barely standing, but that could be possible if they overdo it.

Since Titan and Horse Chatun tied, he is a mess. He is lying on the ground without being able to move a finger.

Medusa looks exhausted as she pierces Chatun's nucleus with her bone spear.

Chatun does not resent Inferno's group. He is dying because he lost. That is all. Nothing comes out of acting up in this situation. His pride does not allow for that. But that doesn't mean they are all like that.

"I – I don't want to die! Let me live! I'll serve the White King! Kyak! You!"

Dead Horse's grey slaughterer Ukanta, who looks like King Kong and killed Kimera, is begging and saying he will serve White Queen. When that did not work, his attitude changed and he attacked Inferno and Medusa.

He made a huge fuss because he is at the brink of death.

Inferno normally would have fought alone, but worked with Medusa to kill Ukanta because the group's win is more important than individual pride right now. He exhausted what strength he had left in the process. It is like he has run out of battery.

Medusa's bone spear crumbles. She does not have the nutrients to sustain it. Releasing her awakened state was a definite, and this was the same for Inferno. Their strength, which had seemed like the fire of an active volcano, had disappeared.

They are completely out of the ability to fight.

All they can do is move.

Bang bang bang!

They hear booming.

It is not from White Queen's side. It is the opposite side.

Blood Lord had been tousling with Hell Mammoth when Red Eye and Parasite King get on its back. It is obvious what they are trying to do.

No matter how infinite Hell Mammoth's stamina seems, it is a finite impersonating the infinite. No creature is without limits.

Even machines manufactured with precision break down.

So how would a living being be?

This is relevant to Disasters too. 3 mutants of the same level have stuck to him.

Woo!

A mountain collapses.

Hell Mammoth's lower body relaxes and his huge body crashes to the ground. Red Eye and Parasite King are still on his back. Blood Lord puts his head to the ground and breathes heavily.

"Are the 2 of us the only ones who are fine?"

"....."

The subordinates' battle is over. They just have to wait for the Disasters' results. It became much more relaxed. Red Eye evaluates the situation.

Red Eye's ears perk. A suspicious sound is bothering him. After his ears, it is his eyes. He is going to go looking for whatever is bothering him.

Red Eye spreads his wings. He can hear it, but he cannot see it. It is better to look from the sky than from the ground. Parasite King

did not care about what he was doing and left him alone.

Inferno and Medusa are not in their awakened states, so their senses are down and did not hear it.

“What is that....”

Red Eye’s words trail off with the unexpected.

It is far.

It is far but it is getting closer. He can see it though faintly.

A tremendous number of people.

It seems they’re the humans who come from another world or something.

“How annoying.”

Inferno’s group cannot go into battle. The only power left are him and Parasite King. Or the mutants they brought?

“He won’t go.”

If this is the Lifers’ destination, it’d be best to block them in advance.

However, Parasite King's attention is on Cruel King.

Parasitism is his goal. He looks like he'll stay in his position in order to achieve this.

"Lifer, Lifer? Come to think of it, it's been a while since I've seen that guy."

He is talking about Cha Jun Sung.

There's no way he died, so his skills will have increased a lot. The abilities of the approaching Lifers must be proportional, won't they?

"Ke ke! Are they coming to hunt? Mere humans hunting me? Us? Fine. I, Red Eye, will show you hell on behalf of mutants."

Bang!

Red Eye left his wings spread out, and flew toward the Lifers.

He is not fully well, but he has about 50% of his strength left.

Koo!

[It's the enemy. Follow me.]

Gate crashers are coming. Europe's mutants could not ignore Red Eye's orders. They have reduced in numbers, but a large force of about 10,000 level 5 and 6s followed Red Eye.

Scattered mutants gather together and run.

There is no way not to notice when there is this much dust, vibration, and other phenomena. Inferno did not stop Red Eye because he cannot help. The only ones they can rely on now are Red Eye and Parasite King.

“Kihit! You’re a mess.”

“You’re here?”

Beholder approaches Inferno. He is not in fine state either. Though his body is okay, he used his mind too much and it was overloaded. A few level 7s and upper level mutants protect Beholder and Inferno’s group. There are few of them but their levels are high so they are not lacking as escorts.

“What’s up with Red Eye? Are there still more of Cruel King’s underlings?”

“It could be related to that explosion.”

“Kihit! Are humans coming?”

“It’s a possibility. He took all of the remaining mutants with him. I guess that means there are that many of them to block.”

“Say your theory is right, what happens if the humans get through?”

Inferno could not easily answer Medusa’s question.

If they get through?

He cannot be sure if it will become the worst case scenario, but the basic answer is fixed.

“It means the situation we wanted isn’t happening.”

The humans hunt mutants. They would have just scoffed if they had been in fine state, but it is difficult for them to handle it when they are dying off. That is why Red Eye’s role is important. White Queen’s and their lives are riding on him.

\*\*\*

“What a mess.”

One Lifer compressed what he is experiencing into a few words. He cannot count how many there are. It has already been long since they reached over 10,000.

Lifers going through missions everywhere saw the mushroom cloud in the air and started changing their directions one by one.

These are the people who were unable to hold back their curiosity. They were going to go back in the middle because they were nervous, but they gained confidence from the Lifers joining them little by little.

Parties joined them and forces joined them. Their numbers kept increasing like cotton absorbing water. Each of them were part of different missions, but they united as one mission.

At first, the Lifers thought that they had misread the mission description.

For them, it is so incredible that they would not have dared to attempt it. The surprising thing is that it was fine before, but their ability to return was blocked once the mission was generated.

There is no way to explain it other than to say that the helpers blocked it on purpose.

They could either complete the mission or die. They feel like they are going crazy.

[Level B Advance Mission: Africa Punishment]

[Goal: Attainment]

[Description: War between Africa and Europe. This is the perfect opportunity to clean up the 2 continents as they chisel away at each other's flesh. White Queen and Cruel King are currently battling, and most of the level 8 mutants are in no state to fight. Go into the heart of the enemy and complete the mission!]

[Reward: 50,000,000 points. Lucky box.]

The PDA marks where the battle is going on.

They are showing the location and pushing the Lifers. The battle is close.

Lifers are a mix of levels B through E, but they are being forced into a level B advancement mission.

They are not considering whether the Lifers have the abilities to complete the mission or not. The reality version is not a game that helps resolve bugs or errors that arise. Everything goes as the helpers want. Once Lifers enter missions, they can be treated like puppets.

Discriminate treatment makes the Lifers angrier. There isn't a ban for the few level B Lifers. It does not do anything to take this issue up with the helpers. They are basically saying that they will save those with value and kill off any without.

Lifers stopped without advancing. If something is happening over there, it is dangerous even if both sides are at war. Since they cannot fight or go back, all they can do is wait.

It isn't a relief even if there are so many of them. It is obvious that just as there are a lot of Lifers, there will be a lot of mutants. It is the same proportionally.

"Are these asshole helpers crazy? Can they treat Lifers like this? Are we lab rats or something that they can play with us?"

They are not wrong.

Lifers are like avatars who obtain information on mutants on behalf of helpers.

Helpers value the Lifers who communicate with them, but they have no choice but to treat them as subordinates once they get their orders.

"Look at the sky!"

Lifers look up.

It is Red Eye, who noticed that they were coming. They will not have imagined that the god of death is descending upon them.

# Chapter 179

---

“An earthquake?”

“Mutants are coming in from 11:00!”

Thick dust is blooming.

The area is extremely wide.

“Fuck! Shoot shoot! Kill them!”

Someone screamed to shoot, but nothing is working out properly.

They are too dense.

They can only see dust in the rear, and mutants are not visible.

They are in no condition to shoot. Each of their command systems are different as well.

However, not all of these Lifers are dumb. Talented people are in the mix. A few moved quickly after they evaluated the situation.

“There’s still distance! Prepare the howitzers! You guys fall back and cover!”

There are so many of them that even with a portion of them moving, it was thousands of people.

They created formations and attacked the mutants coming from the 11:00 direction.

Pew pew!

Bang bang!

Mutants are dying under the hail of bullets and bombs.

But there are more mutants than there are Lifers, and their range is wider.

“Ack!”

The wave of mutants goes over the Lifers at the front. The 2 groups, which cannot mix like water and oil, force shuffling and are surrounded by battling.

With a path, all that is left is close-range battles.

The con is that even this is not easy. They realized that the force of mutants is comprised of level 5 and 6s once they came head to head. Who would have imagined this?

This nonsensical situation?

The fortunate thing is that there are much more Lifers. Due to this, they were able to fight back viciously once they grew accustomed to the situation.

However, they are being pushed back by the mutants on the side of power.

It is because their levels are high. Even lower level 6s need to be taken on by 5 or 6 Lifers with battlesuits.

Woong!

After the time it would take for a cup of tea to grow cold passed since the fighting began, a summons gate opened up near the battlefield. Then, Lifers ran out. These are people who came in without knowing anything.

Since they entered at a distance from Red Eye and his force of mutants, they entered as a level C mission.

It is a ridiculous operation. As soon as the Lifers were summoned, they could not understand the reality unfolding before their eyes. Standard procedure for an initial summons area is for it to be a safe place.

But that rule was broken.

What does that matter when they are manipulating missions.

The Lifers came to their senses when the mutants noticed their presence and went at them. They have no choice but to fight if they want to live.

As the number of Lifers entering increased, the momentum rose and mutants went down. The difference was in whether they provided support or not.

“Are they going to just keep bringing people in? They’re just intending on pushing through recklessly.”

Red Eye watched this from the sky and flew to the ground. He is so fast he isn’t visible. The battlesuit’s response is late, too. Lifers were already in the midst of a melee once they felt that something was weird.

Bang!

Red Eye lengthened both of his arms into whips and swept through the area. Lifers within the perimeter collapse without even the chance to scream.

“Start with the strong guys, end the places with smooth connections.”

Papat!

These secret weapons that change people into super humans. Did they say they're called battlesuits?

He will focus on killing battlesuit users and make the ones getting clear orders a top priority. He can leave the rest to the subordinate mutants. He's strong, but there is only one of him. He can't do what 10 hands need to do with just 1 hand.

Level C Lifers were being slaughtered with Red Eye's participation. Even if they are dumb, there is no way that they do not know he is an ultra high level mutant.

They did not even think to level 8. There are less than 10 people who saw Red Eye in the virtual version, since people who are not rankers do not come close.

“Die! You monster!”

A vibrating weapon goes into Red Eye's thigh. Just by height, he is multiple times taller than Lifers. It is a good location to be stabbed. It seemed to be an attempt at offsetting his mobility. The attempt was good, but the results were bad.

He was fine even after being attacked by Hell Mammoth.

Will his flesh and muscle be cut when a Lifer cuts him?

There's no chance.

Red Eye waved his hands reflexively. The bones of the Lifer hit broke and he went flying like a pin hit by a bowling ball.

“What level is that!”

“It must be level 7 since it’s a level B mission! Let’s get away from him first!”

Normally, level A should have been applied but the helpers blocked the special mission applicable with Red Eye’s appearance. They completely shattered the rules that had been kept until now. It is a secret that only they know.

Lifers who are able to think quickly, quickly create distance between themselves and Red Eye. The situation has come to this, but there are a lot of them and more are coming in. Their chances of surviving increase if they use other Lifers as shields to buy time. Retreating does not mean that they are no longer fighting either. They will do as much as they can. They are next if their shields are wiped out.

“What’s your goal? Why are you trying to go in this direction?”

Red Eye spoke.

Korean, the human language he learned from Black Demon.

He spoke skillfully because he started learning it from birth. It was not difficult for Lifers to understand what he was saying because they are using their translators.

“You think we’re going because we want to? All we did was advance a little when the mushroom cloud went up, but our return was blocked. And then you came!”

Lifers started yelling. They are not surprised by Red Eye’s ability to speak. There are level 7s that are able to speak in human languages. Even those below are able to communicate if they can learn.

“I’m the one who came? You’re not wrong.”

He had come before the Lifers could do anything. Red Eye himself came to them. But that doesn’t mean he has any intention of apologizing.

‘Was it by force?’

The thought came to Red Eye’s mind.

Lifers are forced to go through missions because of those that play with humans on one side and mutants on the other. He has

heard the basic situation from Cha Jun Sung.

‘Rules? That has no meaning. Those guys make changes in whatever way suits them. It gets worse as the difficulty gets higher.’

This is what Cha Jun Sung told him. These people are also in the same situation.

Red Eye knows less about Life Mission than Black Demon does. He only grazed the surface, and Black Demon is the one who heard everything from Cha Jun Sung. It is all doubtful. He can’t tell what is what.

‘I’ll take care of this place first. That’s the right order.’

There’s no change to the fact that he needs to kill these Lifers. When he is finishing up, the other side will be ending as well. The allies’ win is a given.

\*\*\*

“Where is he going with that many mutants?”

Odin kept his mouth shut. Even if he knows nothing else, this mission will become a huge controversy once it is over. He can anticipate extreme backlash from Lifers.

But that is all. There can be backlash, but there are no losses for Life Mission. They are not a customer service center that deals with complaints.

Lifers think that they have the upper hand as they cleanse this world, but they are absolutely under them. Even a top expert doing great in a game is over once the operator suspends the account.

Tsk tsk!

Cha Jun Sung tsked at the scene created by the cluster bomb. The mutants that had been coming at him had evaporated within moments.

The mission was not completed. He cannot let a single one get by since it is annihilation. Mutants out of range are still alive and there are those that are even in pretty good shape. The mission is complete once all of those are dead.

It would be nice to take care of everything because it is an advancement mission, but he did not cling to the idea. He did not want to miss his chance of watching this rare sight, but the level 8s that were done with their battles also held him back. If they approach him out of suspicion of the explosion, he needs to run.

“What a waste. I’d dice them up if it weren’t for Parasite King and the guards.”

The only level 8 in good condition is a parasite. Beholder is out of

energy and not awakened. To think that he can only observe mutants worth millions of points when they are in bad condition and defenseless.

If he goes the extra mile, he could kill one or two.

After that?

It is fortunate that they do not care about the explosion. They could be choosing to stay together instead of going out on a search because they are in such a bad state.

But if one of them dies, they would not stay still. His location would be revealed and Parasite King or the guards would come chasing him. Beehives are ornamental. They are not there to poke at.

“What can I do here?”

A war between level 9s is going on in Africa. A lot of level 8s followed as well. Missions are strangely concentrated in Africa as well. He cannot figure it out easily because he does not know what the helpers are up to.

He had initially entered out of curiosity. He hadn't had thoughts of completing the mission. He predicted that something Lifers do not know about is happening inside the missions.

He realized he had been correct when he entered. He quenched

about half of his curiosity.

There is nothing he can do. He would be able to do something if he could go into his awakened state, but there are a lot of eyes here. All of the helpers will be looking here.

# Chapter 180

---

It has been long since the level 8s finished their battles, and only White Queen and Cruel King are left.

They don't look like they will go for very long either. They are similar overall but White Queen is relaxed unlike Cruel King who seems rushed.

It is because she has her subordinates to back her up. Battles between those at the top are decided by the small things rather than big things. It was not small that the tables had been turned, but it would not have ended so quickly under equivalent conditions.

Bang!

White Queen's spear slashes through the air.

Stabbing?

It is a long distance javelin.

Looking carefully, the end of the flying spear is a hook. It is a measure to prevent penetration with a blow.

The spear goes through Cruel King's stomach. It seemed like it would go through because of the strength it was thrown with, but

it got caught on the hook and bounced back as though being dragged.

Hah!

White Queen stumbles and falls to her knees.

She is exhausted.

Not enough to come down from her awakened state, but her stamina and strength are at their ends.

The right hand weapon and left hand shield she creates in her awakened state are vividly different from what Cha Jun Sung can create. She cannot create them as she wants if they are broken. Her weapon and shield are the most important parts of her body apart from her nucleus.

The most powerful means of attack.

The most powerful means of defense.

Not only is regeneration not an easy feat, she will feel herself losing energy if she regenerates by force. It is best to maintain them.

Boom!

White Queen holds her body up with her shield so that she does not fall over. The top half is cut off and the bottom looks like it was slashed up.

Cruel King's relentless attacks have reduced it to this state.

There are cracks all over her body armor, and blood seeps out. The armor is a part of her as well. If it cracks or rips, her main body is being hurt.

White Queen breathed heavily for a moment and then ran at Cruel King. He is unable to move because he has been speared. His body is not touching the ground, but he looks like he is lying flat.

“Huh? What are you doing there?”

White Queen's eyes are full of wonder. Parasite King suddenly appeared and is observing Cruel King.

“I'm taking over.”

“Taking over? Are you saying that you're going to be parasitic to Cruel King?”

Parasite King nodded. There is no good in hiding his intentions. He does not know how much time it will take to absorb a host like this.

That is not all.

There is no guarantee that he will succeed. Nevertheless, his instincts are telling him that it is a host worth risking his life to take over.

“Did he allow it?”

“He promised me a great host when he brought me here.”

White Queen scratched her head, wondering what to do. If Parasite King succeeds in taking over, will he stop at becoming a creature of the same level?

‘There’s nothing bad about it.’

She welcomes an ally becoming stronger. And judging by his actions, he does not look like he will back away. Her subordinates are half dead, and she is not in great condition either. It is self-destruction to fight with Parasite King, who is in a good state.

“I’ll allow it.”

“Ugh... What are you guys trying to do to me? You runts!”

Cruel King tried to get the spear out, but it did not go as he wanted because White Queen’s strength had gone into it. Dead Horse’s death was his downfall.

Parasite King gathered all kinds of parasites living in his clear body to one place. They keep eating each other.

Level 1s become level 2s, which become level 3s. As they decrease in number, only the top levels are left and as that process repeated several times, a clear parasite the size of a fist came out of Parasite King's body.

“Ho?”

White Queen lets out an exclamation of wonder. As soon as the parasite came out, Parasite King's body went into the ground. He has put all of his abilities into that transparent bug.

“A b-bug!”

Parasite King watched for his chance, and went through Cruel King's open mouth. He is not confident that he could do it by going through Cruel King's flesh and muscle. That is stronger than steel.

White Queen watched for a lapse and recovered her spear.

Then, Cruel King's body hit the floor. He should be going at her because he has been freed, but he was just convulsing with his eyes open.

She cannot tell whether the parasitism is going smoothly or not

with her knowledge.

He just kept convulsing for a while. There is no change to indicate that something is happening.

Parasite King tried desperately to secure the brain. A Disaster's brain is monstrous. It transformed at the presence of a gate crasher, and started attacking. It is another mutant inside a mutant. He needs to calm this down before he can do anything close to securing the mind.

Cruel King's fur grows longer and covers him. It is like looking at a caterpillar creating a cocoon to become an adult, and it went on for several hours.

The cocoon looks like tangled threads, and beats like a heart. It seems he succeeded.

White Queen's body shrinks. She is coming down from her awakened state. Her armor, halved shield, and spear are absorbed into her body.

She could think that it is okay because the battle is over, but that's not the case. A car starts consuming gas as soon as it is turned on. They follow similar rules. It is difficult to maintain her state while injured.

'It's a good thing that we won. But there are too many things to consider.'

Just as it is a bother to prepare for and go into war, the clean up afterwards is no joke either. Of the mutants here, White Queen is the only one who would be able to go into combat. Inferno's group cannot exercise their abilities. Kimera is dead, and Titan and Blood Lord are so injured that they cannot even move.

Red Eye has gone somewhere with the other mutants. White Queen also sensed a presence coming. She would support if she could, but the situation does not allow her to. Just as her subordinates have a duty to protect her, she has a duty to protect them in turn. That is what the head does.

Bang bang bang bang!

Explosions from firearms, red flames, and smoke come soaring.

White Queen realized that Red Eye and the other mutants had gone to fight the humans who had started appearing one day.

The battle range is incredibly large.

It is an ominous sign that two large forces are fighting each other.

If Red Eye gets pushed back, this place won't be safe either. White Queen has the personality to know when to take one step backward in order to take two steps forward.

The best they can do is to retreat.

Whatever the circumstance, they can come back to do what they want with Africa since Cruel King is now dead.

“To become parasitic here of all places where we can’t advance or retreat.”

Boom boom!

The cocoon is a problem.

Since it cannot move, it will not be able to come to fruition if it is left defenseless. It keeps swelling and coming down.

She is in anticipation for what will come out, but also a little anxious. If it cannot be controlled, it might as well be an enemy. White Queen does not have to control it herself. It just needs to listen to Black Demon, or even Red Eye.

“Your Majesty.”

Inferno is pale as he calls out to White Queen.

His body is trembling.

He killed Tirac, but he exhausted all of his energy in return.

Medusa is in a similar state next to him. Her snake hair used to be energetic, but they are now floundering. It is unclear whether they are even alive.

“Inferno, recover as much of your energy as you can and go back to Europe with your colleagues. I’ll wait here for the cocoon and Red Eye.”

“How could we leave her Majesty behind! No! We will stay as well.”

Inferno may seem unreasonable, but there is a reason for it. The war ended with Cruel King and Dead Horse’s deaths. There is no threat.

Red Eye’s actions?

He can’t tell whether he went to fight humans or mutants, but a powerful mutant like him took a large force and went himself.

It is unimaginable to think that they could lose and be pushed all the way here.

They seem to be humans from the way they use firearms.

Weak humans taking him on?

White Queen told Inferno to go back several times, but he would not listen. It may be due to his loyalty, but he cannot be forced. So she drew a moderate line. He must agree to follow orders unconditionally if Red Eye gets pushed back. Inferno did not refute this.

# Chapter 181

---

Once Inferno's group got a tiny bit of their energy back from resting, they roamed the battlefield to consume nutrients. There are no obvious changes though they are absorbing other lives, but it is not like it is not helping. Titan and Blood Lord are completely immobile. They not only need to have their food brought to them, but need to be fed as well. They are half corpses.

Woong woong!

“A sound?”

It tickles their ears. They hear a bothersome sound that is like a bee batting its wings. White Queen looked around to try and find the source.

White Queen frowns.

She cannot find it. She keeps hearing the sound, but she cannot see the source.

It is not far.

She is sure it is nearby. That is why she is confused. Is it something that can trick her senses?

Woong woong woong!

The sound rings in succession. It keeps overlapping. Then there was a change.

A summons gate was created near White Queen, and hundreds of Lifers came through.

Is a raid entering?

No. It is a force. They are all level C Lifers. The same mission is currently listed on the PDA as if copied.

Therefore, hundreds of Lifers can enter at the same time even if they have not been able to advance to level B.

This mission is Africa Punishment.

The levels are divided into C and B, but those are just letters of the alphabet once they enter.

“Hey, this place is a little weird.”

“..... I feel that too.”

Lifers felt the strange atmosphere and activated their battlesuits.

There are forests everywhere but most of the area is made of

plains, so it is possible to identify everything when they look around.

Field scans go over the surface.

They detect life somewhere nearby.

They are inside a mission.

There is a 99.9% chance that the life forms are mutants.

“Look look!”

“A woman?”

“You crazy bastard. Does that white lump look like a woman to you? Not even albinos look like that. Stay alert. That’s a mutant even if this is a safe area.”

A safe area?

They are severely mistaken.

Will they know that what is in front of them is level 9 White Queen?

They could never know. White Queen’s outer appearance is just

simply a woman. She is completely naked at the moment. Her sensual body stimulated them, but that was it. That is a monster wearing the mask of a human.

Inferno's group did not pick up on the Lifers yet because they went to the battlefield. White Queen is the only one looking at the Lifers watching her.

'Is it space movement? That's not possible with the science that existed when I was human. Yeah, that's it. That's how they could go back and forth as they wanted.

She saw with her own eyes.

White Queen made her own conclusion. She had not known that the world would perish and that she herself would become a mutant.

It would be funny to be surprised that someone invented a super science.

"Why are there so many Lifers? How many are there?"

"What did you choose?"

"Africa Punishment."

"Huh? We did Africa Punishment too."

“Really?”

“Yes.”

Lifers found each other and exchanged information.

But the more they talked, the more questions they had and the more confused they felt.

Overlaying missions – something that has never happened before.

“Where are our guests from? I have a lot of questions as well.”

White Queen smiled as she approached the Lifers.

The Lifers’ complexions start turning blue when they see her smiling.

“She – she spoke!”

“What level do they start speaking at in the virtual version?”

“Odd creatures are able to do it at lower levels, but they normally have to be level 7 at least!”

“That’s a level 7?”

“Are you high? We entered a level C mission. That must be an odd creature.”

That is right.

No matter how difficult level C missions are, the appearing mutants are limited at level 6. They can meet level 7s in level B missions.

“I can’t understand most of the words you say, but you’re saying interesting things.”

White Queen is most fluent in English, and she knows how to speak a few other languages beyond that. Excluding the languages she cannot understand, she can hear the words that hundreds of Lifers are saying. The amount she can understand surpasses far beyond the human range.

However, she does not have basic knowledge of missions and levels.

“First, let’s kill that. We need to pick up the pace if we’re going to kill 50,000 of them.”

Level C Africa Punishment is complete once they kill 50,000 mutants. If they are lucky, they can come across a level 1 habitat and finish the mission easily.

“I’ll do it. Kyah! What a waste of her body. I’ll have to go have a ton of fun once the mission is over.”

A Lifer at the front pulls the trigger on his reinforced rifle. A bullet that has the power to go through a car, shoots out and hits White Queen in the middle of her forehead. There is automatic aim in the battlesuit. It is a dead-shot system if the target is clear and there is no outside interference.

“Hit!”

“No! She’s not dead!”

“She’s fine!”

Lifers high five thinking that they killed White Queen. But they doubted their eyes when they heard the sound of metal behind them.

The bullet bounced on the ground a few times before stopping.

A 10mm bullet bounced?

What about the target that was hit?

White Queen wipes her forehead with her hand. There is blood. The bullet did not go through her head, but it cut her skin. The

gun is incredibly large, but she was injured by a firearm. Looking at the Lifers, they each have one.

“I was right, you are dangerous. I can’t let you all live, so I’ll reduce the numbers a bit.”

She does not need to save hundreds of people in order to find out about them. The knowledge they have will overlap anyway, so she only needs one or two of them.

“Whew! It haven’t even really had time to rest.”

Bang!

White Queen jumped into the middle of the humans in her human state. She does not know the extent of their abilities, but they don’t seem like they will be all that powerful.

She needs to save her energy from awakening. Danger does not come with notice. Even looking at her situation now, she hadn’t known that these humans, these Lifers, would appear.

There is no guarantee that this strange situation will go away after she takes care of these people.

White Queen’s one kick breaks a Lifer’s spine. He is wearing a battlesuit, but is the basic type and cannot endure her attack. Even in her unawakened state, she has the combat ability of a level 7. She is okay because she has just exhausted her energy and is not

seriously injured in any way.

‘It’s not easy.’

Lifers seem weak, but they are strong. She gets a feeling of being overwhelmed. If this had been before she fought Cruel King, she would awaken and sweep through them within moments. She is killing as many as she can within a distance with blows, but the armor covering their bodies is unusual. It is absorbing the shock.

Furthermore...

They counterattack. It seems useless, but it was annoying when they come in from everywhere. Each person is similar to a high level mutant.

White Queen did as much as she could.

She wanted to end it while saving as much energy as possible. She finally decided that she could not go on any longer once she heard the familiar resonating sound again and another summons gate opened. It has been less than an hour since hundreds appeared, but the number of people increased in that short time. More people come in than she can kill.

“Your Majesty!”

“I’ll end it. Keep recovering your strength.”

White Queen awakened again when Inferno yelled out.

It is the last of her strength. She swells up in size and covers the Lifers.

But she is still in an awful state with her cracked armor and broken shield. She looks like a level 9, but the amount of strength she has stays at level 8. Even this is so low it is like a battery that could run out at any moment.

Woong!

“Are you coming for me?”

The number of Lifers increases threateningly. The resonating sound rang even while she was awakening, and again after she had awakened. White Queen felt by instinct that this phenomenon is aimed at her and related to her.

“Woah! It’s a mutant!”

“Shoot!”

Bang!

White Queen hit the floor.

Level C Lifers attacked White Queen as soon as they saw her like the veterans they are. They are surprised, but their experiences make their bodies move instinctively.

“As quickly as possible.”

She cannot last long in her awakened state. It is like a candlelight that could go out at any time. She must end it before then.

# Chapter 182

---

Before even 5 minutes had passed, the Lifers entering the mission could not understand why their attentions were straying and they felt sleepy.

All they could remember was a white monster wet red with blood, and the corpses surrounding it.

All they could feel was that something was being wielded at them.

Lifers who entered at the same time were cut in half by White Queen's sword, separating their upper bodies. These dozens of Lifers were all born on different days, but they died on the same day, at the same time, with the same method.

There was no pain. They didn't even know that they had died.

Ping ping ping ping!

White Queen ran at the Lifers as soon as she saw them entering.

She is trying to handle them before they could understand what is going on and get moving.

But there is no reduction in the number of Lifers no matter how many of them she kills, though it did not increase either because

she did not stop.

She is just walking in place.

How many will she have killed?

It is easily over a few thousand. Even still, it is several hundred as it was in the beginning.

There is no end.

White Queen really has reached her limit now. Her energy is about to be drained like a light that is about to go out. She cannot tell when exactly it will be drained.

What she is sure of is that she is so tired that it would not be strange for her to run out immediately.

A few mutants are pressing on among hundreds of Lifers.

They are being held by Beholder. If it had not been for that, the situation would have made a turn for the worst. That does not mean that the situation is good either. It would have ended long ago if it had just been a couple hundred, but there was a limit to holding Lifers because of the fight against dead Lifers.

“Die! Die!”

One Lifer leapt at White Queen's face.

He triggered the hand cannons in each of his hands. It is a last-ditch attempt at an attack.

Bang!

The heat lets out a powerful shockwave that swallows White Queen's face. Her center of gravity goes backward. She raised her shield as she fell over. He gets cut on the edge of the shield and his guts spill out.

The Lifer's blood falls on White Queen, and she absorbs it with her body. She needs to fill up her nutrients even in this way if she can. It is just a temporary measure, but she has no choice if she is to maintain her awakened state even for a few more seconds.

“It’s more dangerous because I can’t predict what’s coming.”

Humans, and humans that she cannot understand with her knowledge, interfered in a war between mutants.

A method of movement in which they move between space.

It was so hard to determine their acts that she finally understood.

She would have killed all of them no matter how many of them there were if she was in good condition, but she has gotten to this

point.

She would have been able to get help if Inferno's group had been okay, but they cannot even take care of themselves right now. White Queen faced danger for the first time ever, and experienced a wall that she cannot get over.

Kyak!

5 to 6 level Lifers are pushing top level mutants into a corner.

They cannot win because they are being pressed under overwhelming numbers. If even the level 7s at the frontmost line die, next is White Queen and Inferno.

“I can't die like this.”

She killed Cruel King with difficulty. Her alliance with Black Demon is guaranteed.

With his help, she can bring collapse to North and South America. If that happens, there is no stronger predator for her.

The way that the Disasters stay aware of each other is different for each, but they are not simply fighting for the heck of it. They want to get rid of enemies that are stronger than they are. They are absolutes as long as those enemies do not exist.

They can exist alone in the world. The Disaster in Oceania is indifferent to world affairs like Black Demon is, but Evil Queen and Bone Monster will cross Asia at some point. She needs to kill them if she is to sleep soundly.

“It’s tired! Cover with the rifle!”

“Damn it!”

Pew pew pew!

White Queen trusted her strong body and launched an aggressive attack against Lifers, but lost mobility as her strength fell. It was about to be hard for her to catch the Lifers who are putting distance between them.

Lifers increased the distance in an effort to survive, and shot the bullets going through level 3 and 4 mutants at White Queen.

Ting ting!

Boom boom!

White Queen raised her halved shield to cover her body. Instead, her lower body and anything not under cover, were showered with bullets.

“You insects!”

Inferno's group raged and rushed at the Lifers. Beholder squeezed what was left of his strength and controlled a few Lifers' minds.

The problem is that none of them were able to bring out even 1% of the strength that they normally have.

Inferno and Medusa were unable to take on even 3 or 4 level C Lifers, and fell back. If they die, the Lifers are able to get hundreds of thousands of points. Cha Jun Sung was frustrated as he watched this in hiding.

“Should I get in there, too?”

At this point, he can fight White Queen. If not, he can just kill one among them.

If he wants to open up the level S store and recover the power he had in the virtual, he needs a ton of points. It is an opportunity that he does not need to put his life on the line for, and throwing it away is stupid.

“Fine. I'm going in, too.”

Cha Jun Sung stood up to go out once he decided to participate.

“Huh?”

It is getting darker. It was a dim day, but it was possible to see with moonlight. It does not matter much even if it gets completely dark because he has a battlesuit. The moon wouldn't have disappeared. What is going on?

A strange change in environment.

Cha Jun Sung subconsciously looked up at the sky. And then his eyes grew wide. An unbelievable spectacle was unfolding.

“What! No way. D – Dragonos?”

Koo!

Dragon Demon Dragonos.

It resembles the Western dragon instead of an Eastern one.

It does not have a constant habitat and roams around, the ultimate mutant in flight. It is smaller than Blood Lord or Hell Mammoth, but the 3 pairs of wings that unfold on either side are so big that they could cover the entire world. Unlike its menacing appearance, its personality is on the gentle side. It usually does not take the lead unless under special circumstances.

With the darkening sky, White Queen and Lifers raise their heads as Cha Jun Sung did. The Lifers' faces turn dark when they

discover Dragonos.

On the other hand, White Queen brightens. The Lifers did not notice the change in her, but her expression showed hope. The appearance of Asia's Dragonos – Black Demon is here.

\*\*\*

The giant Dragonos flies above clouds.

“Dragon, lower the altitude.”

Dragon went below the clouds without difficulty. Dragon is hidden with an automatically protective color because the sun has set and its body color is grey. Black Demon looks down.

War is going on in 2 places. Where Red Eye is and where White Queen is. The side that needs help is the latter. White Queen is busy fighting an endless amount of Lifers entering with her mess of a body. It is a series of close shaves.

Black Demon did not just sit back and watch after sending White Queen to Africa. White Queen put her life on the line in order to keep the conditions of their alliance. It was a given that he provide support.

Cruel King is no ordinary mutant.

Cruel King is such a strong opponent that it would not be strange for him to take a hit while trying to attack him.

“There’s something fun here.”

Black Demon’s attention went to a cocoon beating like a heart.

It still looks immature, but that cocoon will become fairly strong once it develops.

Stronger than his son, Red Eye. Black Demon doesn’t have the ability to tell that Parasite King is involved. He cannot know just from looking at how it looks.

Dragon lowers the altitude. The moon is covered by his huge body and even bigger wings.

White Queen, the Lifers, and Cha Jun Sung watched Dragon come down with their jaws dropped.

“You go to my son.”

Koo!

The roar of a level 8 – a phenomenon of mental decay hails over Lifers.

They did not pass out as they are level C Lifers, but they had anemic symptoms for a moment and looked sick.

Pat!

Black Demon threw his body toward the ground. He does not need to spread his wings.

He can just jump off and land. Dragon flew to the battlefield where Red Eye is. It is far, but that is in human standards.

With Dragon's size, he will arrive with a few bats of his wings.

Tatak!

"Lifer standards won't be enough to take on Disasters... Are they just trying it out? There's a thing called procedure, but it seems they felt rushed."

"How did you get here?"

"I have no intention of helping with the war, but I can't just watch you die."

Is it because her tension is gone? Or because she is exhausted?

White Queen's awakened state is released and she returns to her

human form. She really has no strength leftover now.

# Chapter 183

---

She is so weak that a Lifer could kill her with a submachine gun.

“That – that was a Dragonos, right? It’s a dream! Please say this is a dream!”

“That – that?”

“There’s only one. Won’t we be able to kill it?”

“You crazy bastard! Can’t you see? It’s a top level just from its appearance!”

Black Demon looks like a half mutant with several pairs of eyes and horns.

Even his actions are worryingly relaxed after jumping off of Dragonos. They do not know how the mission has become so entangled, but this is a level 7 at the least.

“There’s a lot I’m curious about. First, let’s handle the situation.”

Papat!

Black Demon dug in where there were the most Lifers gathered together.

Ping!

Thorns come out from all over his body. Hundreds of thorns spread out widely.

Lifers within a 100m radius are unable to avoid them, and are skewered. White Queen is included in that radius, but the thorns in her range shorten or change direction.

Kuk!

The thorns go back.

There are clear traces of the thorns left in the Lifers.

Wounds that mean death. Hundreds of people died within seconds.

“Be careful. Those people, I don’t know how, but they appear by jumping through space. That’s why you can’t end their support in the middle.”

“Pft. With this standard, I could kill tens of thousands. Isn’t that right?”

White Queen did not refute. Honestly, it is true. Even if it weren’t him, she would have been able to do so as well if she were

in good condition.

Black Demon moved around everywhere and took care of Lifers who were rebelling. It is like picking off flies because there is a gap in ability that cannot be narrowed.

White Queen was fragmentary, but she enjoyed Black Demon's battle and understood what exactly whole body mutation is. He changes to his will and attacks. It is so irregular that his next move is unpredictable.

“Why don't they appear?”

White Queen watched Black Demon fight and thought it strange that more Lifers were not being summoned. This is another measure taken by the helpers.

It is worth using Lifers against White Queen and Inferno's group because they are injured. However, there is no longer any use since Black Demon has appeared.

It is impossible to get through his defense. Though they consider Lifers disposable soldiers, they cannot just pour them into poison.

Koo!

Dragon's roar, fiery flames. The other battlefield lights up like it is daytime. Dragonos' breath sets fire to a large radius.

The range is like a disc.

Even mutants of the same level cannot come out safe from a compressed breath with heat of thousands of degrees.

Red Eye avoids being hit with the fire head on as well.

Black Demon extends his finger like a string, found Inferno's group where they were spread out, and pulled them close to him, where White Queen is. It looks like Lifers are not being summoned in anymore, but they cannot let their guards down. If they are moving through space, Lifers could appear right next to them out of nowhere.

They could get stabbed in the back. It is easier to protect them if they are gathered together in one place.

“Are you surprised?”

“I’d be lying if I said I wasn’t. Did you watch from beginning to end?”

Not only White Queen, but Inferno’s group had also not been expecting Black Demon to appear, thinking that he was just a bystander. But he had fallen to them from the sky.

As White Queen said, it would be a lie and strange if they said

they were not surprised.

“No, I just arrived. I estimated the time to come, but it seems I wasn’t late.”

With Dragon’s speed, he can get from Asia to Africa in a day. The driving force from his 3 pairs of wings match that of a jet. That is why he had not felt that he needed to go in advance. They will catch up to the others even if they leave later. Dragon got the scents of White Queen and Inferno’s group when they were going back to Asia from Buckingham Palace, and used these as indicators to find them.

“It seems there aren’t any additional attacks. But that cocoon – what is that?”

Black Demon approached the cocoon.

A powerful beating signal vitals. He is overflowing with curiosity.

He has seen a lot of rare and interesting things in his life, but this cocoon in front of him is also fascinating.

“Hm... Not even I know what will be born from that. All I know is that the worm you sent us as support became parasitic to Cruel King.”

“Worm?”

Black Demon's voice grows louder. He cannot express his surprise with words. Parasite King had been singing that he would find a strong host, and it seems he has achieved his wish. What Black Demon knows is that Parasite King is a level 8 Disaster and Cruel King is level 9. A predator has swallowed up a higher predator.

Black Demon puts his palm to the surface of the beating cocoon. There is a limit to what he can see with just his eyes. Splitting it is the most certain way to see what is inside.

But that would be forcing it out.

That would harm Parasite King, not benefit him in any way. What he can find out by putting his palm to it is also extremely limited, but he can feel the ongoing birth process and feel the flow.

“It’s strong, gentle, tight, and tough.”

“Of course.”

White Queen explains.

The outside of the cocoon is created with a combination of Cruel King’s fur, and is an outer wall to protect what is inside against enemies. Black Demon felt all over the cocoon and admitted that he cannot break through it in its current state. There is no chance of his being able to do it unless he awakens.

“It’s active. The body is being reconstructed. I’m sure he must have been injured severely if he fought. Then he’ll probably be born after completely healing all of that as well.”

It took root in the ground like a plant and took nutrients from the earth.

It will develop through actions like supplementing water when it rains. This does not look like it will end within a few days.

If it takes a long time, it could take a few months or even a few years.

As a parasite, this is the end, the final evolution where nothing can make him more powerful.

Black Demon closed his eyes and looked all over the cocoon for reactions like a doctor listening to a patient through a stethoscope.

White Queen and Inferno’s group wanted to touch it for themselves as well, but they refrained from doing anything unnecessary because they were not sure what could go wrong.

They cannot control their bodies fully because they are injured. If they do something wrong, they could kill it in one go.

“It’s here.”

Boom boom!

After touching various places, the place with the strongest sign of vitals.

This is probably where a mutant's source, the nucleus, is growing.

This kind of important evolution is normally done secretly in a quiet place. But Parasite King had not been able to do that because he was in a rush. It is an opportunity that he will never have again, so he left everything out. It is hard to say whether he is brave or stupid.

Ss ss ss

The change was subtle.

When Black Demon's hand got closer to where the nucleus is, a part of the cocoon twisted and attacked him. White Queen was taken aback and retreated backwards, while Black Demon took the hit.

Because he is close?

Because he couldn't get away?

Neither.

Hundreds of hairs embed on Black Demon's body. Some get on his arms and legs, and some on vital spots. He is covered in skewers.

"It hurts. Huh? Hah! Look at this guy. He's going to try to fill the nutrients he lacks through me?"

The hairs stick a straw in Black Demon's body. It is so strong that the strength being sucked out is insufficient, but it will reach the end at some point if it is not limitless.

Then? All that is left is death.

"Tsk!"

Black Demon's right arm becomes sharp. He brandished his sword-like arm, cut the hairs stuck to his body, and absorbed them instead.

"It'd be best to leave it alone. It is offensive that it attacked me, but this is an ally that can provide great strength and we can't take him out right now anyway."

They did not have a choice from the beginning.

It is best to leave it alone unless they are going to take him out by

force. He only touched it half out of curiosity and half as a joke.

Koo!

“I guess that side is done too.”

He can see Dragon letting out breaths of victory among the flames. The fire rises as though it will burn the clouds. If the enemy is still alive, he would need to blow that smoke down. This useless performance either means that the battle is ending or has ended.

“What will you do now?”

“Since my biggest goal Cruel King is dead, I’ll go back to England, treat my wounds, and take a look at Africa’s ecosystem.”

# Chapter 184

---

Africa is wide. If she searches everywhere, she could find mutants with abilities that rival those of Inferno's group. She desperately needs someone to fill Kimera's spot now that he has died.

Even if it weren't for that, she needs to build up her power if she is to keep an eye on North and South America.

"Evil Queen, you have too many enemies. How much damage will that do to him?"

"Excuse me? Is there someone other than us?"

"I was talking to myself."

Black Demon stopped talking.

Around now, Cha Jun Sung will have arrived in North America and should be wandering around looking for Evil Queen.

He hopes he can kill her but if he doesn't have enough strength, it would be good if he could reduce the number of her offspring or other level 8 mutants.

He is one who has given up on life and has made the decision to die. Since words do not work, he is hoping that they will be

allowed to stay in a place that is advantageous to them.

“That’s that, but there’s a rat hiding somewhere that isn’t going away.”

Black Demon looks at the hill.

He saw a Lifer standing far from White Queen’s group when he was flying down with Dragon.

He is still lying flat on his stomach.

He left the Lifer alone because he was separated, but the Lifer is not running away and is watching the situation even after the battle ended. It does not matter if he lets the Lifer live because he does not pose a threat, but should he say the back of his head tingles? Black Demon is annoyed with the feeling of being watched.

“Rat? I don’t sense anything..... Could it be that huge explosion?”

White Queen activated her senses, but she did not pick up on anything. It does not mean she cannot see or hear because she is out of strength.

“I’ll kill it and come back.”

Papat!

Black Demon disappeared as soon as he spoke. It is not like movement through space. It is momentous movement that is purely through physical ability.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung was watching White Queen and the newly appeared mutant, Black Demon, when he was surprised. Black Demon had been standing there a moment ago, but he disappeared.

'Where – where did he go?'

He quickly looked around, but he could not find him.

It made him nervous. He only saw for a short time, but it was an incredible battling ability that he couldn't take his eyes away from. He killed hundreds of Lifers within minutes in an unawakened state. His style of whole body mutation on top of that, is similar to his. He is level 8 at the least.

Cha Jun Sung silently enters his return in his PDA.

He has seen everything he needed to.

It is a waste to leave the remaining mutants behind, but he needs to get out while he can.

A cutting sound comes out of nowhere from behind him.

The air is split as a sharp weapon goes toward Cha Jun Sung's neck.

Boom!

Cha Jun Sung was lying on his stomach when he went down with his reverse booster. The weapon is going for his neck, so he could get his hip or legs cut if he goes up.

The innocent hill took the hit. It left a deep wound behind.

“He avoided it?”

There is curiosity in Black Demon's tone. He did not use all of his power.

But he had not done it carelessly either. He used the similar strength he had used to kill the Lifers below. He should have died if they were at a similar level.

Cha Jun Sung gulps and quickly creates distance between himself and Black Demon.

He has a cold sweat running all over his body. His battlesuit's temperature function is running properly, but this is not a matter

of being hot or cold. He has been discovered and he only lost sight of the mutant for a moment, but he almost died.

“Damn it! Can’t you just pretend you didn’t see me and let me go?”

“Are you Korean?”

As soon as Cha Jun Sung spoke subconsciously, Black Demon responded in Korean. It did not surprise him. There is no reason to think that mutants cannot speak the human language. The probability of meeting one that can is low, but its final evolutionary entity is that of a human and it is a top level 7, so it could remember Korean.

“I guess you were Korean before you became a mutant? Let’s go our separate ways.”

Black Demon smiles.

It is true that he feels more affection than toward other humans, but he will not let him live. Once they reach level 9, they lose most of their human feelings. He will keep his old feelings in mind however, and kill him painlessly.

“Ugh, this is crazy!”

Cha Jun Sung read the meaning of the smile and shouted out in exasperation.

He exudes a feeling of death. He is intent on killing him no matter what.

‘One on one?’

Cha Jun Sung rolls his eyes. White Queen’s group did not come. They are in a weakened state due to the aftereffects of battle, so the opponent in front of him is the only one he needs to take on.

His thoughts continue to his actions as soon as he gets them organized. If he isn’t in a good position, he will fight back. Black Demon tilts his head.

“That posture looks similar.”

“Shut up. If you’re not going to let me go, come at me.”

“There are lots of things that are similar.”

“What are you talking about?”

Cha Jun Sung organized his thoughts.

He will fight and go into his awakened state if he thinks he might die. He does not like that he will be found out by the helpers, but he does not want to die.

[Battlecore, Overbooster 100% deployed.]

[Combat function in full activation. Battlecore and Overbooster overlap in overmode! I will search for the enemy's weakness until the engine overheats in 2 hours.]

Odin analyzes Black Demon. Finding a weakness means analyzing to find things like where to attack or the nucleus, but the effect is high if they are stronger than the enemy and low if they are weaker. Even if the Lifer knows the weakness, he will die trying if he does not have the strength to act on it. Fortunately, there is a higher chance that Cha Jun Sung will be effective than ineffective.

Bang!

The Overmode's power surrounds the battlesuit.

The driving force of the booster that reached over its limit pushed Cha Jun Sung right in front of Black Demon.

Boom boom boom boom!

The Overmode's attack power is ejected from Cha Jun Sung. Black Demon transformed both his arms to block Cha Jun Sung's attack and avoid it.

"You're pretty good. You're on a completely different level from

the other guys down there. Great!"

He was right when he had thought that this Lifer might be good because he was alone. This kind of strength will allow him to survive in this rough world.

Odin calculates the path of the attacks that come in.

It is an anomaly, and he has no constant format. Since it is better to do it than not, the calculations and Cha Jun Sung's own instincts were combined to respond to the attacks.

'Ugh, why is he so strong?'

He is in an unawakened state. He cannot be pushed back if he cannot dominate, but Overmode and the effect of strengthening his body are not working.

The attacks stopped after the first few times, and all he could do was put up a defense after that.

Cha Jun Sung's sword and Black Demon's transformed hand tangle up dizzyingly.

The auxiliary sensor for motion detection constantly gives alerts on the enemy's attack.

Scratches on the battlesuit increase. He is avoiding critical hits,

but the fact that he is allowing attacks means that his responses are slowing down.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung, I can't predict that mutant's actions.]

[There are dozens of attacks per second, the speed of the blows is at the speed of sound. From the results of analyzing the enemy's unawakened behavior pattern, there is a high chance that it is level 9.]

Odin told Cha Jun Sung what he did not want to hear. He thought that this mutant would be level 8 at most, but the abnormal attack power he experienced opened the path from a level 8 to level 9.

'Which Disaster is he? He's not White Queen or Cruel King. Not Evil Queen either. He's not South America's Bone Monster or Oceania's Neptune.'

He has never seen Bone Monster or Neptune. It is impossible to see Neptune in particular. How is he supposed to be able to see a mutant that lives deep under the ground?

Countless Lifers searched all over Oceania's seas in submarines out of curiosity, but no one saw even a shadow.

"Black – Black Demon?"

He used process of elimination and said the last Disaster's name.

He hopes it is not. If that really is Black Demon, he cannot survive regardless of awakening. He still cannot fight against a level 9 and win.

“You have a good eye.”

Cha Jun Sung ground his teeth hard when Black Demon confirmed the fact. To meet an opponent like that now, he cannot see his future.

Red Eye had said when they met a while ago that if he wants to know why they met, he should build up his strength and go to meet his father.

But his mind has become a mess because of the strong pressure put on him by his opponent. He cannot figure out how to explain it.

‘Stay calm.’

He took a deep breath. There is a saying that one can live if they keep their right mind even if they are being dragged away by a tiger. If that happens, it is honestly the same as being dead but since he himself has been placed in the situation, he cannot help but think differently.

The probability of living is 0% if he refuses this, and the future is just a death sentence.

# Chapter 185

---

Cha Jun Sung considered the number of cases.

If he awakens, he can do something about Black Demon in his unawakened state. But if Black Demon awakens, the gap he narrowed will widen again. He will really die.

‘Let’s run away.’

Since he needs to guard White Queen’s group, it does not seem like he will chase him to the end if he gets away. He needs to take the first step properly so that he won’t get caught.

“Odin, I’m going to run.”

[With Overmode’s output, you can go at mach 1 speed for 1 hour but I can’t guarantee that you’ll be able to get away from him.]

Mach 1 is another expression for the speed of sound.

He can go at 340 m/s in speed but a level 9 might be able to catch up to him with its physical ability.

Cha Jun Sung chose to run away. It hurts his pride to put his tail down without even fighting, but there are times when he can calculate when he needs to stay or go without measuring. The result doesn’t need to come out to see if a tiger or dog is stronger.

The gap between bravery and rashness is paper thin.

“Now!”

Vroom!

The reverse booster exploded while he was facing Black Demon, and he turned his body as he retreated. He just needs to keep going in a straight line like this.

But if he were going to run away, he needed to have run without fighting Black Demon. While he was dragging out the time, uninvited guests had gotten involved.

Bang!

Bang bang bang!

A red meteor falls from the sky. When it collided with the ground, it destroyed everything within a radius and flung out large and small fragments. Cha Jun Sung was not taken aback by the unexpected situation and avoided the fragments, but he fell to the ground when he was hit by a big fist that came through them.

It is a battlesuit with its Overmode, battle function, in full activation.

The outer armor is always reinforced, so most shock is absorbed

and blocked. But the hit he just was enough to not only neutralize the outer armor, but also enough to shake up Cha Jun Sung inside of it.

A large body walks out from the dust. A demon boasting black and red muscles, Red Eye is the one who knocked Cha Jun Sung down.

“Father!”

“I could have caught him. You did something unnecessary.”

Black Demon hates when others interfere in his battles. He does not see it in a good light even if it is his son, Red Eye, especially if the fight is one against one.

“I’m sorry. It looked like he was trying to run away, so I took him down without thinking.”

It was an action by reflex because he thought something bothersome would happen to Black Demon. He had not had any intention to interfere in the fight.

“It’s fine.”

Black Demon waved his hand. What happened happened and it is in the past.

“What about the war?”

“As you can see.....”

Red Eye spoke as he turned his head. Black Demon’s attention followed suit and watched what was happening far away.

Koo!

Dragon flies around like a jet bombing the ground, setting fire to everything. Those flames do not differentiate between allies and enemies.

Pew pew pew!

Things like flies fly around near Dragon as he flies around.

They are thousands of Lifers in battlesuits. They need to launch an air war if they are to fight a flying mutant. They know the Dragonos is level 8, but it will be pandemonium if they cannot kill it.

Lifers threw their lives into it and fought Dragon.

However, they cannot make much of an impact on Dragon’s huge body with reinforced rifles and vibrating weapons. It was also impossible to use weapons of mass destruction because their target was constantly moving and even if they did use these weapons,

they will all be swept through in such a close distance. A mutant like Dragon will not die even after being hit head on by a white phosphorus shell, but this does not apply to Lifers.

Red Eye has left the battle, but Dragon and the remaining mutants are enough to exterminate all of the Lifers, though most of them will die excluding Dragon.

“Red... Red Eye...”

Cha Jun Sung steadied his trembling body and stood up.

He is not wounded, but he had seen stars for a moment when his head was hit.

“You know me?”

“You know me too.”

Black Demon is in front of him, Red Eye behind.

Though Red Eye is not in perfect condition, this is not a situation where he can win even if he fights to his death. The battle grew lukewarm with Red Eye’s appearance.

Cha Jun Sung thought that communication might work because everyone involved is gathered together.

“This face – you remember it, right? You came looking for me yourself.”

“What?”

Cha Jun Sung took his helmet off. Since the situation has taken a turn for the worst, his mind and relaxed state came back to an extent.

He is still scared of Black Demon, but he can breathe with this much. It is an environment in which he is leaning on the moonlight for aid in darkness, but the matter of whether there is light is not important for these people.

“Oh! That human from then!”

Mutants are living beings as well.

They have feelings of course.

Sadness, rage, joy. Red Eye’s emotion is astonishment due to surprise.

Coincidence? Necessity?

To meet in a place like this. He had not imagined that that they would meet like this where it is not just the two of them and Black Demon is here.

Black Demon looked at Cha Jun Sung's face and laughed with his shoulders shaking.

It is different from what has happened until now. He cannot get a grasp of the meaning, but it is not negative. They are the same. They are too much alike. How they look and how they act. He was wondering where he had seen him, but he is exactly the same and he can understand now.

On top of that, that appearance is himself before he evolved to a point that he could not go back from.

Black Demon untransformed both of his hands. Then the murderous feeling pressuring the atmosphere disappeared. Red Eye was also fascinated.

"I have something to talk about with him separately. You go down and guard them."

Black Demon told him not to go near the cocoon. If the weakened Red Eye goes close to the cocoon, it will attack him thinking that he is a source of nutrients.

Red Eye was upset that Black Demon was pushing him away, but he did not refute. He thought that Black Demon would not be doing this for no reason.

Cha Jun Sung gulps. He is curious as to what Black Demon will

say.

He had not been able to explain their relations and had thought first of running away because of the murderous atmosphere and pressure he felt. His mind had become blank because he was so nervous.

“If you knew who I was, you could have said something? Why didn’t you say anything?”

“That’s easy to say.....”

“Really? How immature. It’s too fast. You weren’t as strong as I wanted for you to be.”

Black Demon grumbles. The Cha Jun Sung that he met had transcended humans.

He could win if it is one-on-one, but there is no guarantee when it is two-to-one. Compared to him, Cha Jun Sung now is weak.

He might be special in human standards but if that range is widened to mutants, he cannot even fit in the middle. The difference between the two groups is the difference between heaven and earth.

‘That’s not true. If I awaken, I’m confident in everything other than you and White Queen.’

Cha Jun Sung explained to himself when he heard that he is weak.

He needs to fight to know about mutants like Red Eye and Inferno, but he could win one like Medusa.

He had actually fought Medusa and Beholder at the same time and had dominated that.

Black Demon did not realize that Cha Jun Sung has he Oriax mixed in him.

Isn't it because this is not visible externally?

Cha Jun Sung does not have anything to say regarding this either. He cannot explain for certain either.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung. What are you talking about with them right now?]

Cha Jun Sung hung the PDA up.

Odin could not get in another word before their connection was cut off.

He can be suspicious, but he cannot pressure a Lifer with something like this. He does not have the authority to ask and the

Lifer is not obligated to answer.

“Logging out of the PDA... You act quickly. I’m sure you have a lot to ask.”

“Huh? You know what a PDA is? A mutant?”

How much does he really know?

Could he know why this world changed so much and what Life Mission is?

“You’re the one who gave me the notebook Red Eye brought to me, right?”

“Only half.”

“Half? Is there a 3rd person involved in this other than you and Red Eye?”

“This place – I’m sure we’re being watched, right?”

“Huh?”

Cha Jun Sung was conscious of the sky when Black Demon poke.

It is a battlefield where level 8 and 9s have gathered. It may be

impossible to tap them, but it is obvious that they are watching.

“I’ll show you something interesting, though it’s not supposed to be used this way.”

A pair of bat wings grow from Black Demon’s back. It is incredibly large, unfitting for his body. It is so big that it even looked heavy.

“Dark tent.”

The world is covered.

A hemispherical dome of about 50 meters forms on a vast field with nothing and swallows Cha Jun Sung and Black Demon.

A gap forms between the wings to Black Demon’s will. The surface is covered in bloody veins, and it moves with strange vigor like Parasite King’s cocoon.

“Father, that....”

It is so large that Red Eye and White Queen’s group can also see the dark tent from below the hill.

Other than Red Eye, they have no idea what it is being used for. The only ones who can know what is happening are Black Demon who created the tent, and Cha Jun Sung who is locked in against

his will.

Whatever happens, Black Demon's dark tent showed up in Libya to talk without interference.

# Chapter 186

---

It is dark.

That was Cha Jun Sung's first thought when he was locked up in the dark tent. He cannot see anything. This is the first question. As he went through body modification and became a mutant, he gained the ability to see at night as though it is daytime.

But he cannot see in front of him as though he has gone blind. His other senses are fine. There is only an effect on his sight.

“Manual operation of battlesuit, command. Secure visibility.”

Wiing!

Cha Jun Sung put on the helmet he had taken off. Functions including night vision goggles, heat detection, and infrared detection are activated manually and they scan the stuffy space.

The battlesuit connects to the PDA. When he logged out of the PDA, the helpers were moved so artificial intelligence was automatically logged out as well.

He cannot receive Odin's help. It is a bother, but he needs to figure it out for himself.

“Huh?”

What he can see with his night vision is the shape of the tent that is covering everything.

Did he say that it is a dark tent?

He borrowed the power of machines and was able to figure out the rough configuration of the structure.

But infrared detection is useless.

The dark tent is a living barrier that Black Demon's wings created. The entire thing is marked in red. The infrared ray did not detect anything in particular either.

“Light activation.”

His light turns on. Cha Jun Sung's battlesuit shines a light. The tent's shape becomes clear.

Beep beep!

[The amount of oxygen is decreasing. Preliminary oxygen ejection, time limit 30 minutes.]

Did he block off all ventilation as well?

This tent will breathe since it is also alive. What if it takes the enemy's oxygen so they suffocate, and gets the rest from outside?

It is completely Black Demon's area. Since he is locked in, he will suffocate to death regardless of everything else unless he rips through the tent or digs through the ground.

“Come out.”

Cha Jun Sung was offended.

Why is Black Demon locking him in like this when he said that they should talk?

Does he want to test him?

Ping ping!

Cha Jun Sung is standing in the center of the tent, and something comes flying at him.

He does not know what it is. It is extremely fast. His instincts moved him more quickly than his senses did.

He threw his body to the side at the sign of danger. Then, a sharp thorn fell from the ceiling and dug into the ground. The tent is attacking him.

Ping ping ping ping!

This time, it happened several times, not just once. The speed is the same as before.

But as the attacks overlapped, the entire area including the ceiling had thorns sticking out of it. Cha Jun Sung was rushed trying to avoid them.

He is getting angrier and angrier.

It does not seem like Black Demon would do this without reason, but his patience is running thin. And then he reached his limit.

Kung!

Cha Jun Sung blew up the power buried intrinsically within him. He could not reduce his battlesuit, which had gone through the process to become the Overbooster, into scrap metal.

So while he exploded, he pressed the release button. As the battlesuit separated, his human skin peeled. A demon woke up within the darkness. He turned the PDA off and because he is hidden under the tent, Black Demon is the only one that can see him. He had refrained from awakening solely to fool the helpers. He does not want to hide it away in a situation like this.

A sickle shaped blade forms from Cha Jun Sung's body. He found inspiration for this skill in a mutant, Tornado, he encountered in

the past. If Black Demon does not appear immediately, he intends to chop up the tent.

“You bastard!”

“So... I was right.”

Large pieces of flesh gathered on the ceiling and dropped Black Demon down. He maintained his form and looked over Cha Jun Sung.

“Are you the one who fought Medusa and Beholder in the city of Rome in Italy?”

“How did you know that?”

“When they got back, I was enjoying a date with White Queen.”

Cha Jun Sung did not accept the word ‘date’ literally.

White Queen fought Cruel King, and he had appeared when she was being overwhelmed by Lifers as though he had been waiting. It is right to interpret this as meaning that they held a meeting.

“That’s not what I’m saying. I’m asking how you knew it was me.”

“How could I not?”

Black Demon had looked half human and half mutant, but his appearance began to twist. He had held characteristics of both species, but his body crumpled like clay and then he became one species.

That is a human. A complete human form as Cha Jun Sung himself.

“What are you playing at?”

Cha Jun Sung was not surprised. Imitating his image is nothing for a level 9 that can go through whole body mutation at will.

“Does this look like a joke?”

“Then what else could it be?”

“Cha Moo Hyun, Lim Hye Yang.”

“What?”

“Father Cha Moo Hyun, only son, born August 21, 1966. Mother Lim Hye Yang, 4 siblings, born December 18, 1967, and her family is worse than her neighbors?”

Cha Jun Sung released from his awakened state. He had intended on going wild, but he was covered in goosebumps as soon as he heard what Black Demon was saying. It felt like he had been splashed with cold water.

“You – you, how...”

“I’m sure you know that this is Earth, too? There’s no difference between where you live and this place. The same people lived in the same environment.”

Lived. Past tense. Now, it is dominated by mutants.

“Unless you’re stupid, I’m sure you understood what I’m saying.”

He knows what Black Demon wants to hear.

It is a hint, and a very explicit one at that. A mutant knows his parents’ names and their family relations. How could he have known their birthdates? The same people and environment? He would be dumb if he did not know.

“You’re me?”

“You in that world and me in this world are the same. We’re different but the same and the same but different. Proof? Your body is proof. Cha Jun Sung.”

Cha Jun Sung looks down at his hand.

Awakening of level 8 whole body mutation. Come to think of it, Oriax had said that it was scared he would swallow it up.

Oriax had felt a level 9 potential buried somewhere deep inside of him.

“Are you saying that I’m a level 9 mutant?”

“No. I don’t know the cause, but you weren’t able to awaken properly. There are things along the way that we can’t know. I’m sure it’s coexisting in that body?”

He is not complete. He stopped while evolving. He is strong now but if the strength he was supposed to have was similar to that of Black Demon’s, he has failed.

“Oriax, come out.”

[I don’t want to. I’m scared. He’s a monster that’s out of balance. My existence itself is crushed just by looking at him. Don’t look for me. Figure it out yourself.]

Oriax began talking less after witnessing White Queen and Cruel King.

Its is mixed with Cha Jun Sung, but they are different beings. It

was frightened by a top level predator. This is the same situation.

“As long as you’re me and you don’t give up the life of a mutant, you will fully awaken one day. The idea of 2 Black Demons isn’t bad.”

Cha Jun Sung is speechless. He wants to say that he is a human, but he is currently a mutant no matter which way he tries to look at it. That is why this lacks persuasiveness.

“At the similar time, two changes occurred in two worlds, whereby two results came out. Like this. Isn’t it funny? Lifers develop in your world through a game Life Mission, while mutants develop in my world with the spread of a virus.”

Regardless of their will and instead by the wishes of Life Mission officials, the hunters and game had been decided. That result brought them this kind of meeting.

“You wouldn’t have noticed that they’re the same worlds... There is bound to be overlap when that large of a population is acting.”

He is right.

There are various cases where Lifers enter missions and find traces of memorials or go to find the houses they used to live in.

“This world is a bit more in the future than the world you live in.

Not dozens of years, but more or less 10? I'm sure they controlled it in Life Mission."

"How did you find out? A mutant to know all this stuff that Lifers don't even know."

"I heard it."

# Chapter 187

---

“Heard it?”

“Are you looking at the notebook that was passed to you?”

“I looked through it as a reference a long time ago, but I don’t look at it that much now. There hasn’t been a need to look at it since I became like this. I can kill a level 8 now.”

He can break through with overwhelming force if he completes the level B advance mission. On top of that, the opening card will allow him to skip level A to S. If that happens, it will not matter to have the notebook. Even without it, there is no obstacle in his path. It was not that helpful in the first place, only providing keywords.

“From the tone, it seems you’re not the one who gave it to me.”

“No. Why do you think we gave you the notebook? Because we want you to develop with that as a base? That wasn’t our intention. We wanted it to become a turning point.”

“Turning point?”

“A turning point to change your future. The future did change when my son Red Eye went to Infected Tree, but we needed something certain.”

Cha Jun Sung thought carefully. He does not know exactly what this means, but he can understand to a certain point. The biggest turning point had been Underpass.

He had put his faith in previous experience and the keywords mutant and evolution, but he had almost had his body taken away by Oriax and awakened as a mutant. If Black Demon knew his future, it had become a clear turning point since his world had been flipped upside down.

“You know my future?”

“I know your future before you changed. Right now... I don’t know because you’ve changed.”

“You said you heard it, that you’re not the notebook’s owner. Who else is involved in this other than you and your son Red Eye?”

“Oh, I can’t tell you that.”

“Answer this. Is he the link connecting you and me?”

“Yes.”

For Cha Jun Sung, it is difficult for him to even grasp this situation.

He cannot think of this as the future Cha Jun Sung creating an

arrangement for him. His range of thought is out of range and has not even gotten there yet.

‘He asked repeatedly.’

When the future Cha Jun Sung told him about Life Mission’s secrets, he had told him not to mention him. But Black Demon’s thoughts are different.

He pushed everything over and left to die. He had brought the situation to this and pushed off the responsibility. He is ill-natured.

It is against duty.

Black Demon won’t tell Cha Jun Sung everything either since he did make a promise. But there needs to be some kind of driving force to move him.

“I’ll tell you the way. Going and getting through are your share. Get to level S as quickly as you can and move your mission area to North America.”

“Why?”

“I can’t tell you who the person is, but I can tell you where he is. He went to North America to kill Evil Queen.”

“Evil Queen...”

“Even if you find Evil Queen before he does, I suggest you don’t approach her until you meet up with him. You can’t win with your ability.”

Black Demon has only fought against the future Cha Jun Sung once. It was to see if someone who has reached the apex of humans would be able to take on a level 9 Disaster.

The conclusion was that he could, but not enough to kill.

If he could kill Evil Queen, he would not have lost his friends. The future Cha Jun Sung has much more experience in battle than the current Cha Jun Sung does.

If he goes up to level S and gets all of his specs in order, his pure power will be similar but lacking beyond that. He cannot fill up experience without facing them.

Black Demon had seen Evil Queen when she came to mate as White Queen had done, and got a look at her power.

The strong and weak are decided relatively to Evil Queen as a standard.

“I’ve never fought with her myself, but the force I felt coming from her was less than mine. She’s about similar to White Queen. Around there.”

It is not a definite for the strong to win. The winner is the strong one. Black Demon himself is confident that he is the strongest but is not arrogant.

But honestly thinking, he is sure that he would win if they fight one-on-one without interference.

Arrogance? No, it is confidence.

“Evil Queen is similar to White Queen? Whew! So it’s a difference of style.”

Cha Jun Sung is oriented for close range combat. If the battlesuit’s full energy is put in the Overmode, its offense power is outstanding but it falls behind in endurance. In that sense, Evil Queen is the best opponent because she falls behind in endurance similarly to Cha Jun Sung, but White Queen is the worst opponent because she is like a steel wall.

He is not so as much as White Queen is, but Cruel King is not fitting either.

“Don’t think that it’ll be easy just because I can beat her. You have to be wary of partial destruction. That’s the level 9 Disaster you guys speak of.”

Cha Jun Sung wanted to ask Black Demon why the person he needs to meet is going looking for Evil Queen and why he is trying

to kill her, but he held back.

The biggest reason is that Black Demon won't tell him even if he asks.

"You're spending more time acting separately from your party these days, right?"

Cha Jun Sung looked puzzled. Other than the time he spent stuck in the mission, they haven't spent that much time apart. And this time, he was acting on his own.

"It gets trickier as you advance higher. No matter how well you lead your party, they're bound to be eliminated if they can't advance on their own."

"What is it you want to say?"

"Don't drag them into missions. They'll all die if they don't have the ability."

The words 'They'll all die' became embedded in Cha Jun Sung's heart.

He agrees.

He wasn't thinking about working separately yet, but he can feel that the gap between their levels has grown. It seems that is what

Black Demon wants to say.

“This is all I have to say. Go look for him if there’s more you’re curious about.”

He found out a lot by meeting Black Demon, but not all of his questions had been answered.

It feels like he hasn’t heard everything.

It is a half truth that doesn’t make him feel refreshed.

“Are you done?”

“There’s one more thing. Keep in mind when you’re facing mutants other than me.”

Black Demon gets rid of his human form.

He changes similarly to when Cha Jun Sung awakens. The overall form is the same, but Black Demon is more pronounced. The dark tent wrapped around Black Demon and Cha Jun Sung body cheers and beats crazily with explosive strength.

Cha Jun Sung’s heart started beating faster in his suit.

His hands and feet start trembling as though he is having a

stroke.

This is fear. He hadn't felt this much fear even while witnessing the fight between White Queen and Cruel King because he had watched from afar.

If Cha Jun Sung had been exposed to the murder and match from right in front of them, he would have been acting the same.

“... How did you get this strength?”

Black Demon's power came out even after he awakened.

At this rate, he could burst through the dark tent and shoot into the sky. He has no thoughts of stopping.

Black smoke pours and strength reduces amplification.

Then, another change happened. Faces came out of Black Demon's cheeks and the back of his head, and two pairs of arms came from his armpits. He is a triple monster. It means there are 3 heads and 6 arms. But Black Demon is a quadruple monster. That is a truly the complete level 9's awakened state.

“This... is the final form of evolution that you'll achieve.”

Cha Jun Sung pinched his thigh. It is enough to make him lose his mind just by looking at it.

Strength beyond imagination. It did not even come to mind to fight.

“This is the power of a Disaster. Even if Evil Queen is weaker than me, there isn’t that much of a difference. What do you think? It looks like you shouldn’t approach her, right?”

Cha Jun Sung nodded automatically. He cannot take her on even if he awakens. To think that there is this much of a gap with level 9s. It is hard to grasp.

“Keep this power in mind.”

There are 2 reasons why Black Demon showed Cha Jun Sung the power of awakening. He is placing restrictions so Cha Jun Sung won’t make mistakes, and in the hopes that he will evolve completely since he has become a mutant already. He has never seen someone live for long after becoming intoxicated in his own strength.

Black Demon returned to his human form. He is done. All they have left to do is to release the dark tent and go their separate ways.

“Put your battlesuit on. You look unsightly.”

“Ah!”

Cha Jun Sung realized that he is naked, and put his battlesuit on. His impact tights and underwear had ripped because he awakened.

“Can I ask you one thing?”

“You?”

Cha Jun Sung should be the one asking questions, but for Black Demon to have one. He felt strange because it felt like their roles had switched, but he did not refuse the question.

“... How did your parents pass away?”

“They were in a car accident when I was in my early 20s, when I was just starting the virtual version.”

He had felt like the world was collapsing around him. There is no way to express in words how he had felt then.

“Was it an accident? I guess that’s better since it wasn’t your fault.”

“How about yours?”

Their worlds are different, but they are the same people. Their parents, relatives, and friends would have been the same. But his words are strange. What does he mean ‘your fault’?

“Me. I killed my parents with my own hands.”

“What?”

“Awakening comes without warning. It comes without you knowing about it. When I was awakening, my parents were in front of me.”

Life Mission spread the virus in Black Demon’s world. He does not know how he became infected, but Korea was destroyed.

“It’s a cruel fate. I heard what I wanted. Now... go out.”

Bang!

Black Demon’s arm lengthened and hit Cha Jun Sung. It is a powerful shock that went into his battlesuit, but he had not put in enough strength to kill him.

A part of the dark tent opens and spits Cha Jun Sung out.

Since it did not cushion him, Cha Jun Sung flew out hundreds of meters and rolled on the ground. The world is still dark. Their conversation had not lasted a full hour. There is still a while left before the sun coming up. The night is starting now.

# Chapter 188

---

The battlefield where Red Eye and Dragon rampaged.

More than tens of thousands of corpses are piled up regardless of Lifers and mutants. There are lot who died of burning in the fire.

It is a trick on the eye.

When Dragon appeared, everything including the alive and the dead burned.

Very few Lifers are crawling on the ground. Though they have holes in their chests or their organs are ruptured, they cannot accept death with the lingering hope that they can be fixed as long as they can get back to the briefing room or Mechanic City.

But they need their PDAs if they want to return, but most of them have melted. They lost their functions when they were exposed to the high heat. There are tens of thousands of Lifers. There might be one in good condition if they look for it, but it is nearly impossible to drag these bodies in wretched condition to find something for which they don't know where to look.

Cha Jun Sung passes a field of corpses that looks like something from hell. Whenever he encountered a living Lifer, he used his own PDA to send them back.

There were only 7 of them. He had been thinking that a fair

amount of them would have survived because Red Eye left the battlefield in the middle, but Dragon had used all of his power as a level 8. The Lifers were wiped out.

It is not an annihilation because there are survivors, but it is a fitting expression.

In this way, Cha Jun Sung rescued a total of 11 people. They are all so injured that they could die at any moment. They have held out because of their body modifications and battlesuits.

“What on earth have you done?”

[The mission malfunctioned. We are currently trying to figure out the cause.]

Cha Jun Sung asked Odin once he had time.

He cannot understand why all of these Lifers entered together, and everything was suspicious.

He cannot trust Life Mission because of what Black Demon told him.

“Reward... No. This isn’t a game. What point is a compensation.”

What can a life be compensated with? Death is the end. Cha Jun Sung expected Life Mission to keep their mouths shut. They don’t

really have a reason to give Lifers an explanation. If they don't like it, they can leave.

[Can you tell me what happened in there with Black Demon?]

“We fought.”

[Are you saying that you fought a Disaster and survived?]

“I came flinging out at the end because I took a hit. He was really strong. And what are you going to do if you don't believe me? Aren't you guys hiding a ton of stuff too?”

It is mutual. He will hide as much as he is told and hide even what he is not told. Cha Jun Sung realized that the helpers do not have much influence after meeting their superior. They have influence for Life Mission itself, but they lose authority once their superiors get involved.

He realized while watching this situation.

“Rules were in place like a game in the beginning, but it's to your will as we go further along. It feels like you're treating us like testing specimen.”

Cha Jun Sung took a jab.

Odin does not answer. He did not take the jab because he wanted

to hear the response.

He heard enough from Black Demon.

“You said the goal is to get rid of mutants, right? Then I’m sure it’ll become more important as we go higher through levels 1 through 9. And getting rid of level 9s will be important.”

“The fight between White Queen and Cruel King was a chance to get rid of level 9s. They would all have been killed if Black Demon hadn’t showed up, no?”

Is he talking to Odin?

He is talking to the superiors. They will be listening.

“But the question is why you’re trying to put Lifers in when you could use nuclear weapons or bombs with the science you have.”

He is saying this because he really is curious. No matter how impressive level 9s are, he does not think that they could survive nuclear bombs. What is nuclear power?

It is the worst weapon ever created by humans. It is a weapon that could destroy cities, countries, the world. It means extinction the second they are launched.

They could somehow survive, but that is only if there are 1 or 2. If

dozens are launched, even level 9s will become dust and disappear.

“Fine. I’m sure there’s a reason.”

Cha Jun Sung taunts. Is this how it feels to become a lab rat? How will the rats that are actually tested on feel? He thinks he might be able to understand.

Cha Jun Sung looks across from the battlefield.

There are still mutants over there. It has been half a day since Lifers stopped entering. It can only be seen as an entry being blocked off because it is not working no matter how much they try.

“There are no survivors and I have nothing to do.”

There is nothing he can do if he goes where all of those mutants are gathered together.

Any one of Black Demon, Dragon, and Red Eye have the strength to swallow up Mechanic City. It is impossible for him to get past them and kill White Queen. And he does not want to fight with Black Demon.

“I’ll watch how you take care of this matter.”

Woong!

Cha Jun Sung returns to reality.

The words he left behind have a fair amount of meaning.

\*\*\*

“He’s gone.”

Black Demon’s senses picked up that Cha Jun Sung had disappeared. He has gone back to where he came from. Level 8 and 9 mutants are gathered next to Black Demon.

He intends to stay in this place for a while.

Not that long, but for just about 10 days?

White Queen needs to recover her strength, and that bothers him too.

Boom boom!

He does not want to leave Cruel King, now Parasite King’s host, behind. If that awakens and goes crazy, Black Demon is the only one who can stop it. The rest cannot block it because they are not in good conditions.

Also, those mutants are dead if Lifers enter while he is gone.

Black Demon does not welcome Lifers shooting them up. Dragon and Red Eye will become the subjects of missions, and White Queen's group is included in there as well. That is why he will be taking measures in preparation. He did not tell White Queen's group. He is only going to tell Red Eye a little and end it, too.

“I hope he does well.”

They have more advantages as Cha Jun Sung advances more quickly.

He can focus entirely on himself if Cha Jun Sung kills Evil Queen and South America's Bone Monster. Whatever happens, their side is currently at a greater advantage than Evil Queen is. That whore has too many enemies.

“The negative as opportunity.”

Enemies of the enemy are not allies. They are enemies.

If they are used well however, they may not become allies but they can become aid. He will polish the path and win until it becomes the worst.

\*\*\*

A few days passed after he returned from the mission. Nothing in particular happened in that time. Cha Jun Sung rested comfortably at home in order to organize this thoughts.

His party members were not laboring through missions or risking their lives for points, so they all enjoyed their leisure while only contacting each other. Cha Jun Sung was not able to complete the advance mission Restriction Line to the end. He does not care. He can do something like that at any time, so he has no lingering attachments.

“They do as they want.”

Life Mission can change their rules at any time whenever they want. This means that they can go back and forth on everything. Life Mission controlled missions to flow in the direction they wanted them to. A special mission had not been applied even when he came across Black Demon.

Normally, this would not be possible. Unless a special mission is created, there is no clear criteria to judge the mission's difficulty level.

A Lifer could guarantee their life extemporaneously if they are extremely capable or quick witted, but not all Lifers can be like that. Tens of thousands of Lifers entered Africa, but they died en masse because the system had made it so they could not distinguish what kind of situation they were in.

Everything is hard the first time, and only gets easier after. Meaning that this kind of situation could happen again.

Beep beep!

Cha Jun Sung turns the TV on. His everyday life is not that special just because he is an outstanding Lifer. He is just a normal person outside of missions.

[MBB, we have breaking news. According to aggregate results, the number of level C Lifer deaths is over 300,000. This number is equivalent to that of periods of advancement missions in the past. But there has not been a case where so many Lifers died all at once since the framework was built.]

[The World Federation provided a lot of aid in determining the death count, and each country held an interview to take action. In Korea, Seven Stars' master Ghost Gun Lim Si Hyun agreed to interview, so let's go meet him now.]

The screen changed to an official press conference with a lot of people gathered together. The gentle and handsome Lim Si Hyun is sitting at the head of the table.

# Chapter 189

---

Reporters' questions, Lim Si Hyun's calm responses. There is a reason why Lim Si Hyun came out and not Han Chang Jin. He is seasoned in these matters because he was an actor.

Lim Si Hyun plays a video filmed inside the mission. They have a video of the level 9s that is similar to the one that Cha Jun Sung has. They cut or used special effects to edit the more cruel scenes so as not to create aversion.

It felt like they were watching a war movie, but they cannot enjoy it because it is reality. Tens of thousands of Lifers and mutants collide. It is a large war that destroyed Life Mission's system of parties and forces.

"What you all see in this video filmed by a survivor is the reason why Lifers died as a group. We asked the helpers about this situation, but they are being evasive by saying that this is just an error in the game."

The video continued.

"Level B Lifers in World Federation were left defenseless and had no choice but to return. Helpers only blocked returns for Lifers to level C, and did not block it for level B Lifers."

A reporter's hand shoots up in the air.

It is not time to ask questions, but Lim Si Hyun did not refuse it. It is good to resolve one or two questions as they arise.

“Did level B Lifers abandon their peers in the battlefield and run away?”

“The expression is wrong. We were able to figure out what happened with this incident because of those survivors. If they had died inside the mission, we would have gone over this incident without a word.”

This is something that Cha Jun Sung agrees with as well.

It would have been the perfect crime if there had not been survivors. A lot of people died, but no one would have known why they died.

“But it isn’t wrong to say that they ran away by themselves so they could get away.”

Lim Si Hyun frowns. There is always a reporter who tries to stand out.

“Then what should they have done?”

“Excuse me?”

“The only choices they had were to run away or die. You’re going

to find fault with them for running away? So you're saying that they should have died?"

A person is only allocated one life. That is an unchanging truth. It doesn't look good that they ran away, but they cannot criticize them.

Hm hm!

People in the area are glaring.

They are making it known that the reporter should sit down if he has nothing to say. The reporter had been trying to get a scoop, but could not stand the pressure and sat down.

\*\*\*

Lim Si Hyun answered several other questions, but there was no prominent progress.

Of course.

They need to be connected to Life Mission if they want to resolve this issue.

If they cannot punish the suspects, they are walking in place no matter how much the victims talk about it.

Cha Jun Sung is sure that this incident will be flushed with time.

He touches his PDA.

Since his return from Underpass, he decided to turn it on only when he needs it. It doesn't matter if he is only communicating with Odin, but he does not like the fact that the superiors can watch his every move.

Life Mission will be as suspicious of Cha Jun Sung as he is of Life Mission.

Ring!

While he was watching Lim Si Hyun's interview, his phone rang. The name that comes up on caller ID is Park Jin Hyuk. He is calling by phone because the PDA is off.

"Hello?"

[Jun Sung! PDA. Did you see the PDA notice?]

"Notice?"

[Hurry up and turn it on! Hurry hurry! Mechanic City's a mess right now!]

Cha Jun Sung activated his PDA. He can feel surprise and confusion in Park Jin Hyuk's voice. It became much more comfortable to read others' emotions ever since he became a mutant. Were things other than his physical ability strengthened?

"I'll look at it and contact you."

[Okay! You're going to be really surprised. Lifer World is in a state of emergency too!]

Cha Jun Sung ended the call with Park Jin Hyuk and went into the notice he was talking about. Life Mission uses these notices if they have something to say to Lifers, but it has not been of much use because they didn't have much to say to each other. In other words, it is nominal.

"What... This..."

Cha Jun Sung's words faded away in disbelief.

It is so simple that can be seen as being insincere, but the content is not simple at all. It is an unconventional act that clumsily knocks over the existing framework.

[From this time today, we will be releasing entry restrictions for missions by class. Only stores are restricted. Level E and level B Lifers can enter missions with the release of this restriction. The only limit is to level B because there are no Lifers who have opened level A.]

He is not 100% sure, but it seems that the lowest and top Lifers have come to share missions. If Cha Jun Sung opens up level A, level E Lifers can enter level A as well.

There is no change to the fact that they must advance in order to use stores by level, but it will become easier to gather points if they get on buses. Only time will tell whether this will prove to be something good or bad.

\*\*\*

Release on restrictions.

The opening of top level missions that they could not enter because they were blocked by level. Life Mission tried to get past the incident in Africa as an error in the game.

It is only a guess, but this can only be seen as them bulldozing the wall to try and cover the situation. The release on restriction has both an advantage and a disadvantage.

The advantage is that they can earn a tremendous amount of points.

Think about a level E Lifer who can barely catch a level 1 mutant on his own, joining a level C battlesuit force.

Reward points alone are an average of 1 million. It means that there is no reason for Lifers to go into lower level missions. They cannot use stores because those are blocked, but they can make tons of money even though the market price of points has gone down to less than \$10.

It has been a long time since level C Lifers have become standardized, so their levels are basically the same. Level B advancement is a dream, but they are thinking of taking this chance to accept bus riders to make a lot of money.

The disadvantage is that the number of those dying increased proportionately. Levels D and E Lifers were unable to adjust to level C atmosphere. In lower levels, they can make mistakes and make up for them. In level C however, mistakes take lives. They are unable to adapt, so the risk grows in proportion to the merits gained.

It happened and Life Mission seems to have no thoughts of fixing it.

They are telling Lifers to go into low and high level missions as they please. It is the beginning now, so adventurous Lifers followed this.

“A lot of people are dying, but they’ll break into level B missions too at this rate.”

“Yeah.”

Cha Jun Sung reacted positively to Park Jin Hyuk's words.

In level B raids, 1000 people enter. If they put in as many level B Lifers as they can and fill the rest with level C Lifers, they can enhance their power.

Existing level B mission raids fell behind in quality and quantity, but the restriction release makes it possible to properly mix the two.

Level C Lifers are not becoming level B Lifers just because they complete level B missions. They have not completed level C advancements. They are just helping others, but they gain as much as they sacrifice.

"That's that. When are you thinking of trying an advancement mission? Immediately?"

"Why?"

"World Federation is asking us to help. Not advancement, but just normal level B. It's hard for us to refuse because we got a lot of help from them while you were gone."

Park Jin Hyuk's group acted with the World Federation to get to level B from C during Cha Jun Sung's period of absence. Strategist considered their convenience as much as he could, and they saw a lot of gains from working with World Federation.

World Federation and Strategist do not yet know that Cha Jun Sung has returned.

There is no reason for them to know when they never told them. This is the same for other rankers. They did not say nothing because they were annoyed or because they did not want to. They just haven't had reason to speak to them. Is there really any reason to go to them and tell them, 'I'm alive'?

"Same thoughts?"

Koharu, Kyoko, Violet, and Basil are in agreement with Park Jin Hyuk. It looks like they cannot refuse. Then what do they need to do?

"Do I have to go, too?"

"We'll go on our own."

"You'll be okay?"

"Of course. I think it'll take about 1 or 2 months, so get some rest in the meantime."

He met Park Jin Hyuk for the first time when he was 19, but he is also now in his early 20s. He still looks young, but it is true that he has matured.

“Alright?”

“We can tell them you’re alive, right? I’m sure they’ll bother you once they know, but it’s weird to keep going like this too when it’s not a secret or anything.”

“Go ahead.”

It makes sense. They will keep bumping into each other later, so it is better to just tell them.

‘Should I complete advancement while they’re in their mission? That’d be good.’

He can do it alone, or do it with his party. 1 or 2 months isn’t a short amount of time. He can’t just hang around everyday, so he should just complete it in this time.

Under the assumption that he has plenty of time, he can read the final step if he opens up the level S store and meet all of the specifications he possibly can.

Perfection.

It is the name put only to Lifers of the 36 rankers in the virtual version who reached the end. There is not much time left before he can take that name.

# Chapter 190

---

Life Mission's virtual version is a game, and the reality version is like the name reality. The framework is similar, but the game and reality are clearly different.

There is no choice but the ecosystem of mutants and Lifer levels to become differentiated. However, it is not impossible to fit them together if forced to.

The reality version is marked by the alphabet, but the virtual version uses 5 advancement evaluations to judge Lifer ability. Levels 1 through 5 are separated into Beginner, Experienced, Expert, Pioneer, and Perfection.

Experts can basically be seen as somewhere between levels B and C. Pioneers are A and B, and Perfections are S and A. It is distinguished in between levels because there are huge differences following body modification, battlesuit configuration, and equipment.

Perfection in the virtual version is a level S Lifer in the reality version. Each has different terms from start to end, but it is certain that Perfections and level S Lifers can reach the peak of force.

When the virtual version was creating buzz, only 36 Lifers advanced to Perfection. They are the 36 rankers.

They can advance to Expert level with just time investment and effort, but the difficulty rises significantly once they go over from

## Expert to Pioneer.

So how hard would it have been to go from Pioneer to Perfection? It cannot be explained just by saying that it was difficult.

There are 3 conditions for advancing to Perfection. There is no higher place to reach once all of those conditions are met. All they have to do is look down arrogantly.

First, passive skills and occupational skills must be mastered. This is possible through labor over several days, months, years.

Second is going through the 9th stage of body modifications and owning a 9 combination battlesuit.

This is where hell comes in. There were countless Lifers with the 8th stage of body modifications and 8 combination battlesuits. Life Mission was commercialized for 10 years. There is a gap in the beginning, but the only difference is in who gets there first because there is a decided limit.

Stages 1 through 4 of body modifications are guaranteed successes in the virtual version, but the probability of the character dying becomes higher with stages 5 through 8.

Only 2 or 3 out of 10,000 people succeed in their attempts at stages 7 and 8, and the rest fail. It can be seen as absolutely diabolical. A tremendous amount with experience and proficiency were dropped. There was a backflow of blood.

But stages 5 through 8 are fine because the character does not get deleted. The character becomes deleted starting with level 9, and tens of thousands of Pioneers collapsed here. There are often cases where one person makes 2 or 3 attempts.

Imagine a character they spent day and night creating over several years being deleted. It is horrible.

There was even a lot of news of people who committed suicide or became invalids. That is the risk of body modification.

Battlesuit configuration is not as big of a deal as body modification because battlesuits only break in failure and recovery is possible with points. The 10th stage of body modifications and 10 combination battlesuits are only possible after Perfections and the probabilities only become more atrocious, while the process remains the same.

Only Cha Jun Sung got to this stage and had power that differentiated him from other rankers. When he reached the 10th stage of body modifications, he prayed to a god he does not even believe in to help him. Once these 2 conditions are satisfied, only the last encounter is left. If time and luck are necessary for the 1st and 2nd, the 3rd needs everything: time, luck, and ability. It is a hunt for level 8 mutants.

Since the population is small, it is work to find their habitats and work to kill them. It is a contradiction itself to hope for a one-on-one battle.

They go in hordes if they are at a disadvantage, so they have to expect large numbers. They could only become Perfections once they got through this hellish process.

The reality version is not much different when they look at it. They need to complete level advancement missions to become level S Lifers.

Actually, it must be harder.

The virtual version fights against level 8 with stage 9 of body modifications, but stage 8 needs to fight in the reality version. The gap between 1 level is quite large too. Could it be fortunate that they are not advancing alone but in groups?

If Cha Jun Sung wants to get to level S normally, he needs to complete a level A advancement mission. But he has the opening card. If he uses this, a store that is one level higher opens up. He only needs to complete a level B advance mission.

His body configuration already surpassed human limits when he became a mutant, and his battlesuit is already made of 10 combinations. If he matches the specifications he lacks like with other parts, he will be done with the basic settings. He will become a Perfection.

\*\*\*

“It’s small. Small.”

Cha Jun Sung reads through the mission list carefully. Thinking of the missions as books, he is perusing them. That is how meticulous he is being.

One month passed since Park Jin Hyuk’s group entered a level B mission on the request of World Federation and Strategist. They are not coming back. It seems they will be late. He does not have negative thoughts. They are not weak people.

“I can see what mutant needs to be caught just by reading the mission description. I can automatically draw out the special features of each mutant.”

He completed a level B advancement mission a day earlier. Was it easy? No, it wasn’t.

Cha Jun Sung went in alone, so he had to take on a huge volume. He fought with his mind and body while locked in the mission for over 3 weeks.

Even though he packed a lot of equipment to go in, he was a bit uneasy towards the end.

It took a long time because he had not awakened, had to go through the mission with constraints, and was exhausted. He also got hurt a lot.

“What should I do?”

As he became a level A Lifer, level A missions and store opened up.

He did not use his card however. There is only one chance to use it, so he cannot waste it. He needs to use it after careful deliberation.

The key is in points. He spent more than half of the 100 million points that Life Mission gave him while purchasing B class equipment. He filled it up again through several level B missions, but he does not have a chance in the level S store when he sees the price of equipment in A. He is not sure, but he thinks he might need 10 billion points.

“I don’t think I need to go through body modifications.....”

Cha Jun Sung tested how much strength he could exert without depending on his battlesuit while staying in this world where he has more freedom in his actions.

He has superhuman strength just by strengthening his body even in his human state without awakening. He could beat a super hero.

He does not know how much influence the 10th stage of body modifications has in reality, but it looks like he won’t need to do it from his current state. Lifers go through body modification in order to withstand the pressure from battlesuits. If he cannot

endure it with this body, he can figure it out then.

To put it simply, this means that body modification is not the first purchase order. The first is full configuration of his battlesuit, the second is purchasing weapons.

He will not purchase weapons in level S. Firearms and heavy weapons become heavier and increase in power as they go higher in level.

However, the proximity range of swords cannot help but have limits on size. He can lift them with body modification and battlesuit strength though they are big and heavy, but they are not easy to brandish because of the body structure.

Is it the difference between shooting and brandishing?

Even in the virtual version, sword weapons are flocked in the elite level rather than legend. Cha Jun Sung's weapon, the Ultimate Hades Blade, is elite level as well. This means that there are swords at legend level too.

The basic specifications of weapons go higher as the level increases because it is a game. The reason why he got an elite anyway is because it is +18 but also because the Overbooster and Ultimate Hades Blade have a good synergy.

[Ultimate Hades Blade]

– Ultimate Hades Blade: 1 billion points, 200 million achievement points

– Description: The ultimate sword that gets its name the god of death, Hades. It is created with the best metal in Life Mission adamantium and falls behind other weapons in the sword line on various fronts, but it is specialized for drawing which is something a Blader cannot live without. If it is linked to the battlesuit's system while holding the hilt, the booster explodes and brings the drawing speed up to its limit. It is the best weapon for blows and slashes.

The Ultimate Hades Blade's guard can raise the drawing speed on its own, and 4 small boosters are built into it.

On top of that, Cha Jun Sung's Overbooster raises the speed and though only momentaneous, it surpasses the speed of sound and supersonic speed. Even in the case of a level 9, unless it is prepared, it will miss the moment he draws it.

He used it against Evil Queen several times, but he had not used the booster.

He had made her aware with frivolous attacks. He saved his attack to stab her but used it in the end of the battle, and succeeded in cutting her in half.

A sword that is specialized in one thing rather than various but minor functions. That is the Ultimate Hades Blade and the essential weapon that Cha Jun Sung needs.

Ring!

[You have purchased the Ultimate Hades Blade. 1 billion points and 200 million achievement points will be deducted.]

There is no room to consider it.

Cha Jun Sung did not hesitate. He thought that it was a lot and as soon as he paid the price of the weapon, the number of points he has plummeted.

He only has a couple hundred million left. He cannot use the level S store even if he opens it. He does not even have enough points to buy from the level A store.

“So it’s a matter of whether I should do a level C every few days, or whether I should just get a ton of points from level B.”

Both have their pros and cons. The amount of points he will earn is similar, but level C is annoying because he needs to repeat it while level B is dangerous because the difficulty level is higher.

It did not take a long time for him to make a decision. Level B is more fitting for him, but he becomes disconnected from Park Jin Hyuk as the amount of time he spends inside a mission becomes longer. He does not know when they will return, but it is more comfortable to go in and out of missions if he is to keep checking. They need to discuss the direction that they will be going in from

now on.

# Chapter 191

---

Park Jin Hyuk's group returned after Cha Jun Sung had started working on a level C mission for more than 2 weeks. As expected, nothing in particular happened.

It was hard enough fighting mutants but they ran away whenever they got the chance to, so he needed to spend weeks chasing them rather than killing.

“A project to make 10 billion? You want to gather not even 1 billion, but 10 billion?”

“I can't find a reason to open it up unless I have that. You see this? Isn't it cool?”

Cha Jun Sung took out his Ultimate Hades Blade and put it in front of Park Jin Hyuk. It is painted simply in black without any embellishments.

The 4 small boosters on the hilt are quite impressive.

“Ultimate Hades Blade?”

“Of course Koharu recognizes it.”

“How many points is it?”

“1 billion.”

Park Jin Hyuk holds his chest in surprise. That's worth 1 billion points?

Kyoko scolded him not to overreact, but he really is surprised. This is the same for the other party members.

1 billion is enough to be armed with the best of level B with points leftover.

But to think that it is so little that it could all be gone with buying just one level A weapon.

“Everything in the level A store is like this. What do you think level S will be like? It's really hard even to make a battlesuit in level A. I thought of 10 billion as a minimum, too.”

Level A missions where they need to fight against level 8s. They do not need to experience it to know that the difficulty is going to be tremendous. He will not try it until he reaches Perfection level.

He cannot enter at random either. He can guess what kind of mutant will appear. He needed to come up with a plan to prepare for any number of cases.

“And I'll tell you while we're all gathered together. I'm not going to help you guys with advancing. I hope you'll understand my decision.”

Park Jin Hyuk's group has the ability to complete normal level B missions if they work with the World Federation. It means that they play their assigned roles well. After Cha Jun Sung tried out level B advancement, he realized that letting Park Jin Hyuk's group ride his bus to advance is not doing good for them but harming them.

The power that Cha Jun Sung gained as he became a mutant is not something that he got through normal measures.

He knocked over the boundaries that he would have had to get past in sequence. Originally, he was going to take responsibility for Park Jin Hyuk's group until level B advancement. But his thoughts changed after he met the level 8 and 9s in Africa.

They need to get stronger on their own. They need to go on their own rather than having someone lead them from the front. They cannot advance if he keeps helping them. He would not have worried so much if this were a game because they can learn as they die. But they each only have one life because this is reality.

There is no guarantee even for rankers to easily get through the level B boundary. He will leave them alone if their limit is level B. He will not force them higher.

“Everyone is able to see the list of level A missions since the restriction has been lifted, right?”

Tremendous amounts of reward points. The level of difficulty is

dizzying just from reading the description.

They cannot even get a sense of the range of the area they will have to explore and the number of mutants they will meet.

A long time ago, the special mission that came up because of Red Eye and Parasite King is nothing, just the tip of the iceberg. They were both injured and in Red Eye's case, it occurred somewhere other than his homeground so the number of reward points did not reach over 50 million.

However, the level A missions that come up in the PDA are of a different dimension.

They went over 1 billion at a minimum and some even reached over 2 billion. Stepping foot in this kind of hell is just an act that shortens their life spans. They need to stay in place if they do not have sufficient ability.

“We’re okay.”

“Yeah.”

Koharu spoke in place of the party as if it were nothing.

Park Jin Hyuk agrees with her. They understand how Cha Jun Sung is feeling.

“It may take time, but the number of level B Lifers is increasing and we can fill in for the lacking level Cs. The World Federation is thinking of advancing in 1 year. We’re going to try it then.”

“That sounds appropriate.”

“This is something I felt while completing level B, but we can handle it if a few levels 5 and 6 show up. It’s just that level 7 is really... Should I say it’s one-sided? I say I’m careful, but there are always casualties.”

Park Jin Hyuk spoke bitterly. Level 7s are different by tendency, but aggressive ones jump out at Lifers in the middle and create chaos.

Even while reinforced rifles rip their skin and break their bones, they try to kill even one more Lifer. They need to get dozens in additional support even when 9 combination battlesuit rankers all get involved.

Cha Jun Sung kills those kinds of level 7s alone.

Park Jin Hyuk cannot imagine what he could have experienced while staying in a mission like that.

“2 come out in an advancement mission. If you’re unlucky, 3 could come out.”

1 is too much but to think that two or three could appear, this is

an impasse that level B Lifers like Park Jin Hyuk do not want to face. Assuming the worst, all 1000 raid members will have to be level B Lifers.

“Are level A missions on hold until you make 10 billion points?”

“They’re not of a difficulty that I can complete with level A specifications. Killing a level 8 is a result, but I need to match everything with level S in order to endure the process.”

10 billion is a goal that he made simply, too. Considering the details, it is 10 billion with just level S after completing all level A specifications.

“Level 8, ugh... that’s like a level in my dreams.”

The gap between levels 6 and 7 is tremendous, but the gap between 7 and 8 is even greater. Cha Jun Sung can kill dozens if he is in his awakened state and fights with his life on the line. And there is no end if he hits and runs.

“There are less than 50 level A missions. Jun Sung, is there one that you’ve picked out?”

“Yeah.”

“North America?”

"I should, shouldn't I? I'm familiar with it and though it was virtual, I've caught her before."

Cha Jun Sung's starting point is North America. He's been to other continents, but he only stayed for a short time because they were like quests.

He caught level 8 mutants in North America, too.

Becoming a mutant as a Perfection is like Princess Odelia walking the path of fresh blood.

Fresh Blood Princess Odelia.

She is Evil Queen's youngest daughter. Fitting to her title Fresh Blood, her growth was cruel and oppressive.

Killing Odelia was the point when Cha Jun Sung decided to commit himself to raid Evil Queen. It is something he felt after killing Evil Queen, but her daughter resembles the mother more than the father so their battling styles are more similar. He killed the youngest daughter to advance, and he also killed the oldest and third daughter while looking for her. As a result, he killed 3 total.

The oldest should have been the strongest and the youngest the weakest, but this was only half right. The youngest is weak, but the oldest is 2nd of the four daughters in combat ability. The strongest is the 2nd daughter. Their genealogy is twisted.

He wanted to kill all of them while he was at it, but he could not find the 2nd daughter wherever she was hiding. That is why he killed Evil Queen right away.

“Jun Sung, how many level 8s did you kill in total in North America?”

“3.”

They are only Evil Queen’s daughters.

Was it 5 if he widened the range to include all level 8s? Or was it 6?

It is 5. He has caught Blood Lord and Cerberus, too.

Koharu caught White Fog and Violet caught Broad Lord. What was it that Basil caught? He suddenly cannot remember.

“I caught Seven Color Worm King.”

“Ah ah!”

Like a mutant evolved from a bug, it is a monster of stamina that just will not die easily.

It is colored in the 7 colors of the rainbow, so it is one of the

hardest Disasters to find because it has the ability to assimilate into the environment.

“We roamed around for days because we couldn’t find each other even though we were right in front of each other.”

“.....”

“Ha ha.”

Park Jin Hyuk has a blank expression.

Cha Jun Sung laughed slightly. That is possible with Seven Color Worm King’s 7 colors and Basil’s 9 combination Stealth.

Basil was called Invisible, and he had the lowest combat ability of the 36 rankers.

Seven Color Worm King is also the lowest of the Disasters. Rankers look for level 8s that are fitting to them. They cannot catch ones that they cannot beat even if they find them.

Odelia who Cha Jun Sung killed is weak like Seven Color Worm King. They do not fit when considering combat ability, but what could they do when they happened to come across each other?

Contrary to this, Koharu’s White Fog and Violet’s Broad Lord are on the mid and strong side.

“It’s not now, but my first level 8 hunt was Princess of Fresh Blood.”

Odelia’s combat style is stored in his mind.

The details are fuzzy, but all he needs to do is watch the videos he put up on his blog. What Cha Jun Sung is worried about is finding where she lives. A level 8’s area is more than the territory of one country. On top of that, Odelia is White Queen’s youngest daughter. Her assigned area must be bigger.

“So the key is to find Fresh Blood’s path.”

# Chapter 192

---

Level 8s do not get their names for no reason. Names come from their tendencies or actions, and it comes from actions in Odelia's case. Who said she's not a crazy bitch's daughter? The things they do are similar.

"I want to hurry up and advance. I want to catch Princess of Fresh Blood with you, Jun Sung."

"Don't be hasty."

They need to go back the more they are hasty. If Park Jin Hyuk becomes a level A Lifer, Cha Jun Sung wants to take him along even if he does not bring it up. Missions do not run away.

"What's your plan going forward?"

"There isn't much other than going into level B missions with World Federation once every 1 or 2 months. Oh right! When we told them that you're alive, they asked to see you."

Park Jin Hyuk told Strategist that Cha Jun Sung is alive.

It was fun. Of course he was surprised since Cha Jun Sung had returned after 1 year and 5 months.

"Did you tell them that you went into a level B mission with me

too?”

“Oh, no. They’ll bother you about doing missions together if I tell them that.”

Park Jin Hyuk’s group understand Cha Jun Sung, but Strategist’s group will probably not. To them, getting to level S is important regardless of buses or whatever.

They think of results more than the process. They’ll think that they’re just shortening time since they are of the mind that they’ll get there anyway. They are rankers too.

“Good. It’s a bother to meet them right away, so I’ll earn some points and then meet them.”

He wanted to hunt without thinking about anything else for a few months.

He will eliminate external elements. They can do level B missions without his help.

“Resting is good too, but level A store points are beyond what I expected. I came up too fast. It’ll be best to prepare before advancing.”

Cha Jun Sung was an attribute. That is why he does not have enough points he is holding onto.

World Federation decided to do the level B advancement next year. If Park Jin Hyuk's group does not take a break and instead keeps saving points, they may not be able to do everything but they should be able to match level A specifications to a point as soon as they advance.

“Ms. Violet. How are your clan members doing?”

“There are only 3 level B Lifers including me, and the rest are backed up at level C. Contribution is a more annoying system than we thought.”

Violet and Cha Jun Sung's circumstances are quite different. All she wants to do is bring her clan to level B in whatever way it takes even if she needs to get them on her bus.

Though it may be unmerited, level B has a wider range of activities than level C. But if Violet causes mayhem in a level C mission, all of the contribution points go to her. There is no point even if she passes the burden onto other Lifers. Tricks do not matter because helpers measure it in real time.

‘I can't get involved.’

Cha Jun Sung was going to stop Violet, but did not. Matters involving her clan are not things that he can interfere with. It is entirely someone else's jurisdiction.

“Every Monday is the day for us to get together. The location is here. Anyone object?”

“No.”

“No.”

Cha Jun Sung chose Monday to be their day to meet. It is best to decide on a date and time to meet so they do not have to bother contacting each other each time.

Then they talked about everyday matters unrelated to the missions since they are close to each other, before they scattered. Cha Jun Sung steadily revved the engine as well.

\*\*\*

A large office.

A luxurious desk is sitting in an office at the end of something like a palace. Strategist is sitting there working. World Federation is a giant made from a combination of super large guilds of dozens of countries.

It was created because of Life Mission and as a place where people gather, the federation is not only run for missions. In some ways, it is like an enterprise. It is just that it is too big to be called an enterprise.

Other than when going through missions, Strategist took care of all of the issues that needed thinking. He cannot do it alone because there is a lot to do. They have a lot of people working under them, so they do the work and he makes the decisions.

“The death count is huge. Is it an adverse effect of releasing the restriction? Though it is good.”

He does not mean that it is good that people died. Strategist is not so rotten that he thinks like that. He is talking about the benefit of releasing the restriction. Things do not work out for people no matter what they do, but things work for people no matter what.

“Being able to see information on level A missions means... someone opened it up.”

It happened a few days ago. He was surprised when he got back from a level B mission. The level A mission list opens. It is the birth of a level A Lifer.

Level B Lifers had only been doing good for others because though E Lifers could see the list of level B missions that B Lifers opened up, they could not see anything above them. But they are seeing those benefits as well because of somebody.

Strategist stopped working and got lost in his own thoughts. A level A Lifer who appeared out of nowhere. He can guarantee that this person is not from World Federation.

There is no way he would not know if it were a Lifer in the World Federation. It is impossible for people to avoid the federation's surveillance all over the world even if they are not related to the federation itself. Unless they are taking an unusual route, that is.

Is it an individual? A group?

It is fascinating in itself that someone got through level B. He knows through several experiences. No matter how much a lifer modifies his body and battlesuit, mission difficulty exceeds the Lifer's development limit. It has been created so a minority cannot break through it from the beginning.

“Bloody Kingdom? No.”

The group with the strongest force after World Federation is Bloody Kingdom. There is a possibility, but it is just a possibility.

When the restriction was lifted, they filled a 1000 person raid with level B and C Lifers, and entered a level B mission worth 30 million points.

They can complete it with the sacrifice of a minority.

The minority here depends on thought, but it is inside 100 people. They were as careful as they could be, but they could not avoid having casualties. That is how hellish the difficulty is.

So what will a 50 million point mission be like? Analyzing advancement pattern by mission from level C through E, several level 7s could appear.

Terrifying monsters.

If they create mayhem in the middle of Lifers, there would be no answer. At this point, there would be less than a 50% chance of success even if World Federation and Bloody Kingdom combined their forces.

“A strong minority is more effective than a half-hearted majority. As small as it is, it is good for hitting and retreating. But they’re still level B Lifers.”

This is the problem.

Lifers advance through stores. Level B Lifers can only use the level B store. Completing advancement with this?

“What could I have missed?”

Strategist thinks. His forte is that he is unbiased.

People often say:

That doesn’t make sense. That can’t happen. No way. People judge what others can do based on their own abilities.

It is a bad way to think. How could they judge others on their own standards?

Strategist does not say it is ‘100% impossible’ even if it is beyond imagination, and says ‘even if it is 99.9% impossible, 0.1% is possible’.

Level B advancement?

It is impossible now, but he cannot say that is 100%.

Unexpected variables come up at random in Life Mission.

He needs to find a small link. It is only frustrating when he does not know anything but if he has a clue, he can find it out by using that as an indicator.

“Variable. Something in particular that happened recently. Something we hadn’t expected.”

There is no reason to search through his entire memory. A few months is enough.

Oh! He remembered. Overload is alive.

He tried calling Park Jin Hyuk’s group but was staying still because his request for a meeting had been rejected, but he recalled

them today.

“Opening card! Right. He can open the level A store with that!”

A magic card that can give a level B Lifer, level A strength. He can complete an advancement mission with minority strength if he has help from that card.

“This idiot!”

He was forgetting something important. It is somewhat strange that Park Jin Hyuk’s group is level B. Doesn’t he have to take his party members along with him?

He did not think about it for long because he can guess the reason.

“I need to meet him no matter what.”

Strategist clenches his fists in excitement. Rankers who have taken on level 8s have the mutants that each ranker hunted, memorized.

This is the same for Strategist. If he just gets to level A, the rest is easy.

# Chapter 193

---

Once a few months begin overlapping, they are not just months any longer. It is bound to change to half a year, then a year.

Cha Jun Sung, armed with the Ultimate Hades Blade, slaughtered mutants in level C advancement missions worth 2 million points and accumulated points.

He did not have plans for action. He did not spare his body either.

Once he entered a mission, he killed everything in sight regardless of danger. There are a lot even in level C, so his battlesuit's energy ran low quickly in the beginning but he used rapid chargers multiple times. He remodeled to level A as he gathered more points. Just as there are steps to advancement, there are steps in remodeling. It is stupid to skip the middle steps.

Skipping steps results in a similar consumption of points. There is no need to fight while maintaining level B specifications. Level C missions are far below his standards.

They die with one drawing of the Ultimate Hades Blade's booster and Overmode.

Twice is overdoing it too. Once is enough.

With wind pressure that is strong enough to split the air, it cuts a mutant in half even if it is big in size. They are so weak that even if

several thousands of them come at him, he could take care of all of them within a couple hours.

It is after about 1 year since he started his labor.

He completed his level A specifications. Level C advancement missions are still on the difficult side, but this does not apply to Cha Jun Sung and he just finds them boring.

Whether the mission purpose is annihilation or attainment, he completes it within half a day.

‘Let’s raise the difficulty level.’

Cha Jun Sung changes his location from level C to B. When he is not awakened, he is similar to a weak level 8 with just the abilities he got through the power of a store. He withstood the pressure from his battlesuit with his body as a mutant. This is proof that his body has surpassed level 8 body modifications at the least.

The level of difficulty is higher than in level C, but B cannot block Cha Jun Sung either.

It is just that there is a lot of aversion as a higher level. If upper level 7s push through in volume, he cannot just go at them without thinking it through like he did in level C. Though they seem weak, level C and B are clearly different. Cha Jun Sung understood what Black Demon told him inside the dark tent while he was going through level B.

‘You can’t beat Evil Queen even if you get to level S.’

Complete level A specifications is about the level of a weak 8. Let alone Red Eye or Inferno, it is not enough for mutants like Medusa and Titan.

If the limit to growth is constant with advancement, as Black Demon said, going one-on-one against a Disaster is too much even if he opens up the level S store. He does not know if they are all like that, but levels 8 and 9 from the virtual version at the least have been downgraded in reality.

He grew more bored as the days went by, so he thought about trying out the lowest level A mission but he quit when he grasped the limitations. He won’t have other thoughts until he gets up to the position he can get to.

He will become a Perfection.

It is too early to make an attempt at danger when he can go higher. When he cannot see anywhere higher to go is when he needs to overdo it and get moving.

\*\*\*

[Will you accept full remodeling of the battlesuit?]

[You have accepted. 11 billion points and 2.2 billion achievement points will be deducted.]

## The battle for Mechanic City.

Area A zone 's1 all store is bustling with tens of thousands of Lifers. Cha Jun Sung is on the top floor of the all store.

Cha Jun Sung and a few special cyborgs are the only present on this top floor. Just like the PDA store, no one can enter the floors unless they satisfy the conditions by level.

The top floor is the level S store. He normally cannot enter it, but he is allowed for just today. He has used the opening card.

“Crazy! 11 billion points? I used 60% on one battlesuit.”

He expected that it would be expensive. There is no way it would not be expensive when it is level S. He just feels empty.

How many days? How many months?

1 year.

He prepared for precisely 1 year 2 months. He only hunted like crazy, putting his faith in his infinite stamina.

He only took a minimal break, and turned over a part of the level B and C missions.

It is to the point where he nearly took care of 5% of the 2 levels. Cha Jun Sung took care of tens of thousands by himself. Like this, he accumulated 25 billion points. These are not the holding points, but the total amount. He invested 7 billion points in level A specifications. He opened level S with 18 billion, and used 11 billion on just his battlesuit.

“How many years will it take for average Lifers to match up level A specifications?”

The gap to Cha Jun Sung is already prominent. It is such a large difference that they cannot narrow it no matter what they do.

If level A is like this, what about level S?

That's a dream.

But this is a phenomenon that has long been anticipated. As they go higher, there is nothing to do when the classes and levels change into the shape of a pyramid. Talent and luck do not matter. There will be less high level Lifers than the 36 rankers there were in the virtual version. It is over if they just die once in reality.

“Those guys will become level A Lifers.”

Not long ago, Park Jin Hyuk's group entered a 50 million point

level B mission with World Federation. Over 1 year, the number of level B Lifers increased.

He heard that they filled most of the 1000 people. There are no level B Lifers left in reality. World Federation used all of their power.

At around the same time, Bloody Kingdom made an attempt at level B advancement. Everyone yearns to go up. The path they are pursuing is the same. He cannot know how many people entered but they probably reached over 500. Just because their behavior is bad does not mean their abilities are.

“Hm. Should I just have entered?”

Cha Jun Sung’s tone is strange. Somehow Strategist found out and is sure that he is the level A Lifer, and contacted him.

He just asked to meet at first and their contact was rare for a while before the obsession became real. It was not an unpleasant obsession.

He was looking for him to request help with the level B advancement mission. Strategist asked him to only get involved to take care of mutants when Lifers were in danger so they would not die, but he made his refusal clear through Park Jin Hyuk.

It is better for them not to advance if they do not have the ability to.

If he enters, he needs to help them in whatever way.

Only when it is dangerous?

No way.

The only reason why he has any lingering regrets is the thought that something might happen to Park Jin Hyuk' group.

30 million and 50 million.

It is a difference of 20 million, but it is enough to distribute the guard.

He shook his thoughts. He did well. Since they have been going into level B missions for over 1 year, they will do well on their own. He will maintain his initial decision not to help them.

The number of people who will become level A Lifers is unknown. He is considering requesting support if they become the same level. They will be on different standards, but it will not be a bus system.

Beep beep!

Cha Jun Sung turns on the level S store. There are a lot of curious things. Weapons capable of destroying entire cities, devices that

extend lifespan without body modification. There is even medicine that cures incurable diseases. There are a lot of other things that he wants, but he does not have enough points. He needs to only purchase what he needs. Since he has already gotten his big frame weapon and battlesuit, he can get the rest of the settings together for the most part if he uses the rest of his points.

“I’ll have to use this well.”

Cha Jun Sung carefully put something the size of a human torso in his space compression bag. It is something that costs 2 billion points. He hopes he won’t have to use it, but no one knows what could happen. It will be reassuring to have one.

“One week?”

“Yes. The battlesuit will be shipped to the address marked on the PDA.”

It will take 1 week for the battlesuit to be fully remodeled. It is the first time he is getting a break in a while. He wants to go into a level A mission as soon as he gets it, but he cannot skip experimenting and go straight to practice. He will make an attempt after doing some simple tests.

\*\*\*

Boom boom!

A 50 meter, level 7 Metal Giant falls backward. It had not been able to withstand the shock of a strong strike to its chest. The blow is surprising.

Cha Jun Sung transformed his left hand into a heavy cannon and is floating in the air.

Just now, he knocked Metal Giant over with an air buster.

This incredible power dug into that sturdy level 7 mutant's chest muscles.

“It’s weak.”

There is a gap in power. He did not turn the Overbooster on and he is not in Overmode state. Even still, the 50 meter Metal Giant looks small.

He cannot foresee victory with level B specifications and level A will be superior though it will not be unilateral, but it feels like it is just completely under his feet.

He beat it up a few times and shot the cannon at its chest, and it cannot come to its senses. This is a fully remodeled battlesuit. Cha Jun Sung recovered the full power that he had in the virtual version. It is a developmental rate that none of the other 36 rankers can follow.

As expected, his reinforced mutant body can withstand the fully

remodeled battlesuit's pressure, which can only be done with body modifications beyond the 9th step.

[Battlecore, Overbooster 100% deployed.]

[Combat function in full operation. Battlecore and Overbooster overlap with Overmode operation! 8 hours until engine overheats, energy recovery rate 50% adjustment!]

Cha Jun Sung went into the Metal Giant mission on purpose.

Its significance is that he can test out his battlesuit properly as the mission is trickier.

His Overmode now is the maximum output he had when he was fighting Evil Queen. It is slightly different in reality, but the error range is not that large.

Bang!

The Overbooster burst and shot at Metal Giant's head as it was trying to get up. Because it is a speed that exceeds fuselage vision, it could not react.

“Split it, Hades.”

Bang!

He does not always have to brandish up when drawing.

Cha Jun Sung put Hades over his shoulder brought it down in the reverse direction, down.

The 4 built-in boosters on the hilt and the Overmode's whole body booster brings his drawing speed to its highest. It is truly supersonic.

Bang bang!

Metal Giant is split in a straight line from top to bottom.

It is sitting on the ground, but it is still a 50 meter giant. This is impossible for Hades to do when it is barely 2 meters long. It is because the wind pressure and vacuum wave from the sword expanded the attack range.

Ping ping!

The alert that he completed the mission tickles his ears, but he did not even hear it. Cha Jun Sung is busy looking at his hand and Hades.

“I’m a Perfection.”

Cha Jun Sung smiles in satisfaction. With this, all of his preparations are complete.

It is tomorrow. Tomorrow, he will leave to catch Princess of Fresh Blood, Odelia.

Alone.

# Chapter 194

---

[Level A Mission: Path of Blood ] [Goal: Attainment]

[Description: Princess of Fresh Blood Odelia. The youngest of the 3 males and 4 females born from North America's Evil Queen and South America's Bon Load. She is without a doubt the youngest in her bloodline, but she is wicked just like her mother. She tortures humans and mutants alike, putting their blood in her pocket to use in creating her path of blood. Lifer Cha Jun Sung must track Odelia's trace, the path of fresh blood, and obtain her pocket.]

[Reward: 1.1 billion points. Lucky box.]

It is an incredible amount of points if not comparing to that time with Red Eye.

North America is Evil Queen's area, which means it is also Odelia's area. She could mobilize tens of thousands of mutants with a flick of her hand. She is the craziest of the crazy, an unmatched bitch. The sisters are only slightly different in tendencies, none of them are normal which is fitting as they are Evil Queen's daughters. He does not know about the 2nd daughter because he has not seen her, but wouldn't she be the same?

Killing Odelia is the condition for completion, but he expects obstacles. She will have escort mutants since she has the title of princess. In the virtual version, a few level 7s and many level 5 and 6s guarded her. This means that he needs to get rid of everything related to Odelia in order to end it.

“It was Dallas, right?”

In the virtual version, Odelia’s home was in Dallas.

The other sisters had been scattered around near the Washington area. It is Evil Queen’s consideration. She allowed family, those loyal, and even level 8s who were friendly to reside in America, and chased the others away to Canada. She did not kill them. They are a power that is a waste to kill. If she leaves them alone, they could at least play the role of a protective wall.

Beep beep!

Cha Jun Sung turns on the electronic map saved on his PDA. a big and clear hologram forms in the air. He purchased it in the level A store. It is not just something to look at but has additional functions like marking and detailed descriptions, so this one map is priced at 10 million points.

“Register the coordinates for Dallas... Where was I dropped?”

He needs to know where his initial summons area is. If he just knows where that is, he can register the location and link the path to Dallas.

Honestly, this is just a guess too.

At this point, there is no way for him to know if Odelia is in Dallas when he is in reality and not the virtual. The reason why he is sticking to Dallas is because he thinks it is better than wandering around without a place in mind. It is best to search the places with highest probability first. It would have been frustrating if he entered with a blank slate, not knowing anything.

North America is big.

America?

Of course it is big.

The land that Evil Queen gave Odelia alone is easily multiple times the size of Korea.

The distance to the mutants they had to kill in lower level missions was short because the active regions were small.

But they began to widen starting in level C and now surpassed the size of countries in level A. He might have to search through all of America just to find Odelia.

Think about digging through all of this. It is basically a tour of America. And if he trespasses on another princess' area by mistake, it will become bothersome.

The difference in difficulty level is huge between level A and lower level missions, but there is a lot of information he can use.

He cannot ignore the fact that he caught her in the virtual version, including the fact that he prepared to catch her.

That is why Cha Jun Sung chose Odelia. He can make the most of the information he has on her home and combat style.

“And I need to find the unidentified figure.”

The figure Black Demon talked about. He will be killing 2 birds with 1 stone by looking for him as well.

Human? Mutant?

He will be incredibly strong since he said he will kill Evil Queen.

“First... Odin, find out where we are.”

[Maximum output wide scan activated, condition search of location within 10km radius... Search complete. Estimated small city Houston.]

There are 2 types of scans.

The kind that uses a magnetic field to search for life or the area, and the type that interlocks satellite and battle suit for a more fine-tuned search. In this case, it can even read road signs.

It is just that energy consumption is severe and the range is limited.

This means that he cannot use it whenever he wants to.

If he could use it as he pleased, he would be able to find Odelia right away.

Cha Jun Sung enters the name of the small Houston city Odin told him in the electronic map. A bright blue line links a path to Dallas. Times are also marked by the distance and method he will move. It looks like it will be quick if he goes on the road by booster. The important thing is whether or not Odelia is in Dallas.

As soon as the path was linked, a red dot which is probably Cha Jun Sung blinks in Houston. He enlarged the electronic map and found a path that he can move through. It is not a normal path he would be able to arrive in in the shortest time possible. Battle suits can become cars and planes. Getting on the road is a basic, and he can go over a mountain if he needs to.

“Shall we get going?”

Cha Jun Sung crosses his arms. Fire comes out of the two boosters on his heels and quickly pushes him forward at a speed of 100km/hr. Cha Jun Sung got out of the city and got on a road that shows him a different world from Korea.

Objects speed by him. There are no attacks from mutants.

It is not that there are no mutants, but their traces and strength were very faint. This kind of city will be level C, so that means there is only one reason.

They have already been swept through by Lifers on a mission. And then they must have been filled in with underlings from another land.

Even if they clean up an area, this cycle will just continue unless they dry up the seed. That is how an ecosystem works.

\*\*\*

A mission is a giant frame.

What does that mean?

Inside Path of Blood, the level A mission Cha Jun Sung is doing, dozens of level B, hundreds of level C, thousands of level D, and tens of thousands of level E missions are scattered.

Cha Jun Sung does not know the exact range of Odelia's area either. All he knows is that in one word, it is 'wide'.

There are bound to be Lifers going through missions separately from Cha Jun Sung somewhere in that area. On Cha Jun Sung's way to Dallas, he encountered countless mutants. He ignored the

underlings and let them go. It is a bother to deal with each of them.

He either took a space to relax or took on mutants above level 5. But there other times when he stopped, and that was when he came across a situation that he could not just ignore and pass by.

Ack!

He does not know how many people there were in the beginning. Hundreds of Lifers were in fierce battle in the middle of a large city on his way to Dallas.

Mutants, stimulated by the sweet smell of human flesh, wreak havoc. He frowns because there are so many of them. It seems they already reached over 1000 and the number kept increasing.

Cha Jun Sung watched the battle from on top of a high building and sighed.

Just by looking, it looks like a raid made of level C Lifers. He is not sure if it is confidence or conceit, but it seems their mission is annihilation related to Black Goblins. It is crazy.

Black Goblin is level 6. It looks like a goblin that appears in comic books and has dark black skin as though it were dyed in India ink, so it is a Black Goblin.

There is a mix of adults and younger Black Goblins, and there is a level 7 head Black Goblin in their cove creating a mess. It is a

configuration where they cannot avoid annihilation.

“They put their faith in numbers and came in.”

Cha Jun Sung took out his Hades and shook his head in pity. Level C Lifers were given the ability to enter level B missions when the restriction was lifted, and force personnel could increase to raids.

It is speculation, but it seems they entered a level B mission with a full raid.

The way they are armed is incredible. It was the best they could get on level C standards.

Papat!

Cha Jun Sung jumped down from the building and dug in among the Black Goblins. He is so fast that the level 6 Black Goblins did not even notice him.

Hades dances. It takes simple actions like stabbing and chopping, but the Black Goblins’ bodies are perforated and cut.

Cha Jun Sung hunted the higher level 5 and 6 Black Goblins. He left the level 3 and 4s for the other Lifers to handle. He is not trying to get in their way. The strong and weak ones are the same to Cha Jun Sung anyway.

# Chapter 195

---

His deeper meaning is to take care of at least one more higher level Black Goblin while they are taking on the lower level ones that they can handle. Like an arrow penetrating black hail, Cha Jun Sung killed Black Goblins as he made his way to the head Black Goblin. He needs to kill the general. Lifers did not see Cha Jun Sung properly because they are surrounded by lower level Black Goblins. They just know that something has appeared.

“It’s the 4th. The 4th.”

This is the 4th time he is helping someone else’s mission since he entered Path of Blood. He has not even completed 1% of his own, and is just helping others.

He is grumbling but he does not have complaints. Though he is acting foolishly, he cannot just pass by when he can rescue people.

It is not anything difficult, or anything that he needs to risk his life for.

“I’ll send you in one blow.”

Cha Jun Sung puts Hades away. Hades’ scabbard is thick, sturdy, and configured in various and complicated machinery.

There is no choice if he is to withstand the shock from the blow. Additionally, there are 2 energy cores that charge Hades’ booster

inside the scabbard.

Bang!

The Overbooter's power made Cha Jun Sung leave his footprint on the ground and fly right before the Black Goblin general. He pulled out Hades as he went flying.

He brandished it in the opposite direction he did when he killed Metal Giant. It is a normal drawing. He cut diagonally from the crotch to armpit.

[You have earned 16 million points and 9.6 million achievement points.]

‘Nice.’

Cha Jun Sung quietly felt delighted. It could be assumed that he can gather up points quickly if he only hunts level 7s, but this is not the case because it is hard to come across them.

Finding a level 7 by chance like this is like a bonus.

Inattention brings misfortune. The Black Goblin general was caught off guard. If it had known that Cha Jun Sung was this strong, it may have been able to last a little longer.

It had been arrogant thinking that this world is its world, but fell

under an unexpected attack.

Kyak!

When the Black Goblin general died so easily, the other Black Goblins grow fearful and scatter. For mutants, even when there are a lot of them, they back down if they lose momentum.

They choose dying over running away if their pride is strong, but it is more common for mutants under level 7 to be geared more toward their survival instincts than they are to their pride.

Black Goblins retreat.

They did not choose anywhere near Cha Jun Sung as their withdrawal route. They ran away in the opposite direction in whatever way they could.

The Lifers finally discovered Cha Jun Sung once the Black Goblins left. They cannot see his face because of his battle suit. There is no reason for his identity to be revealed unless he tells them either. They are just passing by each other. He will just greet them.

Cha Jun Sung turns off combat mode and walks toward the Lifers.

A fully remodeled battle suit is grand.

It is 2 heads taller than a normal battle suit too. The Lifers gulp when he approaches them.

“Who is in charge?”

“.....”

The atmosphere becomes cold.

The Lifers are grateful that Cha Jun Sung chased away the Black Goblins, but they also felt wary. That is why no one could come forward easily. For him to wander around this hellish place alone, he must be beyond level B. His appearance alone shows that he has fully remodeled his battle suit.

“Odin, we’re looking for the hidden picture.”

[Behavior analysis based on heart rate, pulse rate, breathing rate... Analysis complete.]

[7 Lifers are showing similar reactions. They share responsibilities, which means there is a high probability that they are cadres. I will mark them.]

Battle suit functions are infinite.

In Cha Jun Sung’s view, the hologram marks the 7 Lifers in

charge in a different color.

Zing!

Lasers in red light point to 7 people. They are speechless at the performance of this battle suit that is incomparable to their own.

“Why are you hiding? You haven’t done anything wrong to me.”

“Well.....”

The people in charge cannot explain why either and stutter. Cha Jun Sung looks at the 7 people and speaks as though he does not care.

“You all. What do you think you’re doing entering a level B mission as level C Lifers?”

“Excuse me?”

“Are you a suicide squad? You’re people who have gone through a lot of missions, but thought to skip difficulty levels. I’m sure you weren’t putting your faith in the fact that you have 1000 people with you?”

It does not hurt to try. He spoke as the words came out.

Oy!

They are not saying anything. They must have put their faith in numbers. Cha Jun Sung puts his head in his hand. He was of course holding his helmet, but the action showed what he was feeling.

“Why do you think the Black Goblin general watched from far away? He was playing with you because he knew that he could kill you at any time.”

Cha Jun Sung revealed their mistake.

The Lifers could not refute what he is saying. He is saying such true things that it is almost cruel. A level 7 is so strong that it can create chaos even while it is surrounded by level B Lifers. Level C Lifers are just snacks.

“How many people died?”

“... I believe at least 600 people died.”

Those in charge are pressured by Cha Jun Sung’s vigor, and respond.

Given they were a full raid, more than half died. Many will have died while looking for the Black Goblins as well. If he had not helped them, they would all have been killed.

“Keep your comrades’ deaths in your hearts. The result of recklessness is perdition.”

Cha Jun Sung said everything he needed to and turned his body. They should have understood with this much, and they were speechless with the gruesome reality of what they did when they entered with spirit.

They need to thank him for saving their lives, but they cannot speak. So they just watched Cha Jun Sung as he disappeared. Cha Jun Sung did not flaunt it either because it is not something he did in order to get rewarded. The person who saved and those who were saved can just go on their separate ways.

“Master, the mission...”

“We’re quitting.”

The person called master declared that they are quitting. The mission goal is annihilation. The mission became much easier with the Black Goblin general’s death, but the level 6 Black Goblins are burdensome for them as well. He had thought they would be able to complete the mission with 1000 people, but realized they have no chance after coming face to face with them.

“Is he a level B Lifer?”

“I know a World Federation Lifer, and his battle suit doesn’t look

like that. I think that's gone through some more remodeling.”

There is a limit in the range of remodeling they can do by store level. If they are the same level, the shape would be similar to other people's whether that is the World Federation. Cha Jun Sung's is a full remodeling, but a level C Lifer cannot evaluate that with level C standards.

“Could he be?”

“Is there someone you have in mind?”

“It's been 1 year since level A missions were opened up. Could he be that person?”

“That person? What! No way!”

“He's just 1 person, but he is an existing Lifer. The probability of meeting him is low, but it isn't impossible. And his combat ability on top of that!”

His handiwork in getting through all of those Black Goblins to split the general into two pieces with just 1 blow.

He surpassed what is possible according to level B standards.

A level A Lifer was born about 1 year ago, and they are guessing that is him.

“Recklessness leads to perdition.....”

The person in charge thinks back to what Cha Jun Sung said. He gained a new life in this vast land. It is the probability being hit by lightning on a clear day. They had been lucky.

But if there is a bright side, there is also a dark side.

Far away from these Lifers, there are other Lifers caught in terribly awful luck.

# Chapter 196

---

“Ah....”

It is unbelievable even after seeing the atrocity with his own eyes. It is a force that left with vigor, but they plummeted within moments.

Where did it go wrong?

Right, it was from then. It started getting twisted once they met that Lifer. He brought them here.

A Lifer whose whole body was pierced with dozens of odd looking tentacles is writhing in pain. It made holes in the battle suit itself.

The tentacles suck something in. His helmet was ripped off by the strong hit, and the Lifer's exposed middle-aged bare face is shriveling as though he is growing older.

The strength he gained from body modifications disappears. He looks healthy on the outside because of how large the battle suit is, but the Lifer is hollow as the life is being sucked out of him. He died with just his skin left behind.

“Ha... Good. So good! There really is a taste to bothering humans!”

She is red. Red like blood. 8 legs, resembling a spider, a lower body the size of a 3 story building contrary to a normally sized beautiful woman's upper body – a peculiar appearance that distinguishes her from common mutants. A strange and inexplicable aura comes from this red spider woman.

She is Evil Queen's youngest daughter, Princess of Fresh Blood Odelia.

“Eh eh.....”

“I was worrying because the number of humans living in my area had decreased drastically, but it was a blessing that you all appeared! You have a lot of vitality too!”

They are weird humans who started appearing a few years ago. They are different from the weak ones. They do not pose a threat, but they fight.

There is fun in torturing them. The humans living in the empty buildings and bunkers in her area are so boring they make her yawn. They die of things like heart attacks just from something small like having an arm or leg cut off. But these special humans do not die easily even under torture.

Their blood is good quality too, so it was excellent for replenishing her nutrients.

About 10 to 100 people go around together, but her energy

consumption is low even if she fights all of those numbers at the same time.

Odelia only came face to face with Lifers a few times.

She just listened to what Evil Queen and her 3 sisters told her. But starting not too long ago, she was able to come across Lifers periodically. These strange humans, Lifers, were not easily visible. That is why she used her head. Since she cannot find them, she will make them come to her.

“Ho ho. Good job. I’ll ask you to keep doing a good job. You know what happens if you don’t listen, right?”

Odelia looks behind her as she speaks. A Lifer is leaning on the wall and looking at her. His eyes are empty. He does not seem like a person who is alive.

“... How much more do we have to do this crap for you to let us go?”

Odelia smiled, baring her sharp red teeth, instead of speaking. The Lifer wanted to rip that face apart, but held back.

He does not have the strength or ability to rip her face apart, and he cannot run away.

The moment he runs away, Odelia will kill his only sibling.

Papat!

Lifers who were watching for an opportunity realized that they could no longer deal with it and ran away. It just so happened that Odelia was talking to the Lifer who brought them to this place. They cannot save their strength. If they put their battle suits in maximum output and run away through the sky, she will not be able to follow them because she does not have wings.

“Where are you going?”

The thick fur on her spider body extend to hundreds of meters and tie up the Lifers who are running away. Their movements are so slow she yawns.

“Let go! Let me go!”

“Sa – save me! You crazy bastard! You’re a Lifer too! Fight! Ack!”

Odelia did not kill the noisy Lifers, but settled with binding them up. She choked them and knocked them out since she cannot block their mouths. The Lifer watched this and closed his eyes. This is a nightmare.

“At least let my brother go! Aren’t I enough? Please!”

“No.”

The man grinds his teeth. His brother is being held prisoner by Odelia. He escorted Lifers to Odelia in exchange for sparing his brother's life.

Until now, he repeated this 6 times. Hundreds of people died in this pain. He will not be able to repent for these sins even in death. If hell exists, he will probably go there. He killed other people in order to save his brother.

‘How....’

It was a 5000 point level D mission. He had entered with a light heart.

He was going to help his brother grow because he is a level C Lifer, but they absurdly ran into Odelia. He thought it was a dream. It does not make sense.

There are degrees to special missions. There is an extremely low probability of entering a level D mission and running into a level 8 mutant. Even a dream would be terrible, but this is reality.

‘If there is a god, please save us...”

He cried out to god inside. There is no god in this world.

\*\*\*

“Damn! Not here.”

Cha Jun Sung arrived in Dallas. He had been delayed on his way while helping other Lifers, but it had not taken long. Did it take about 2 weeks?

When he arrived, he settled his heart and focused on finding Odelia.

The first place he went was where he discovered Odelia in the virtual version. It would be nice to find her in one try, but it looks like it will not be so easy.

“Ah! Am I going to have to search through all of Texas at this rate? What a pain.”

Texas is one of America’s 51 states. It cannot be underestimated. Just one state is 7 times the size of Korea. The scale alone is different.

Texas is a problem but what if Odelia is in northern, eastern, or western America unlike in the virtual version? He is going crazy just thinking about it.

He needs to move thousands of kilometers, but it won’t get that far.

The first summons area is always in the vicinity where the mutants are presumed to be. The criteria for this vicinity is decided on mission level.

Even if it is level A, they would not separate them into poles.

Accordingly, there is a high probability that Odelia is somewhere in this wide Texas encompassing Houston where he first started out and Dallas where he ended up.

‘Oriax, can you find her?’

[You would have felt her too if she were close. There's really no need to ask me.]

The two of them share their senses. Cha Jun Sung had just asked himself.

He wants to absorb a high level mutant like he did in Public Underground to find out, but even that is difficult because Odin is watching him. He is in the middle of a level A mission. It is not a situation in which he can turn off his PDA. He needs to maintain his logged in state even if it is just to see the electronic map.

“Where do I find this crazy bitch?”

Ack!

Odelia!

Cha Jun Sung maximized his battle suit's microphone and yelled. He would like it if she got caught like this, but Odelia is not in Dallas.

If he yells, his throat will just hurt. There are a lot of mutants as it is a large city.

They noticed his presence and went at him little by little, but they were handled with a few cuts.

At this rate, there could be a level 7. Of course he cannot be sure.

"Whew! There's a lot of time. We'll meet at some point if I keep digging around. It doesn't have to be Odelia. Anyone, get caught. I'll take care of you."

The mission he is in is at such a high level that a special mission does not form no matter what mutant he meets.

This process is included in Path of Blood.

But the mission will change automatically if he meets a stronger mutant like one of her sisters, so going after this is another method.

He does not care which of the 4 sisters he meet, but he wants to

avoid the 2nd daughter if he can. She is strong. The 1st and 3rd are perfect.

“Come to think of it, it’s weird. There isn’t a mission related to the 3rd daughter.”

Cha Jun Sung organized the expected level 8s by mission as he went through the list of level A missions before entering Path of Blood. It was not difficult.

It was like Europe’s Inferno, Medusa, and Titan, and Asia’s Red Eye and Dragon.

The mutants he is familiar with are the subjects of level A missions. If it is North America, it must be Evil Queen’s 4 daughters and a few other level 8s, but only the 3rd daughter was nowhere to be seen.

Benukiz of Depravity.

That is Odelia’s 3rd sister.

# Chapter 197

---

Benukiz is slightly ahead in attack power. There is a difference, but Benukiz is alright instead of Odelia.

Since she is in charge of southern and western region Louisiana facing Texas, the distance is far or short depending on how you look at it. The 4 sisters have smooth exchanges. That is why it was meaningless to divide their areas. There is no concept of invasion because they have a my house is your house way of thinking.

Their ruling territory is decided, but there is no reason for that ruling party to be the only ones present. They could be mixed together.

It would normally not be welcome to run into such transcendental beings, but it is for Cha Jun Sung.

“Ugh, I don’t know. It must be a mission error or she’s dead.”

He is certain there are no missions related to Benukiz. Let’s think about it simply. Life Mission either lost track of her and couldn’t register her, or she died.

Cha Jun Sung looked at Dallas reduced to ruins with his arms crossed, and tapped his arm with his fingers. He is thinking about what to do.

First, he chose this as his primary destination because he hunted

Odelia here.

Since she is not here, he needs to set his destination to the 2nd, 3rd, 4th rounds until he finds her. His battle suit is at highest performance because it is fully remodeled, but there are limits.

What if Odelia appears in the time he has gone somewhere else? There are a lot of places for him to go. He cannot go back and forth to the same place.

“Is there nothing I can do?”

Cha Jun Sung’s face grew sour and grumbled as he took a sphere the size of a motorcycle out of his space compression bag. It was like looking at a marble enlarged by hundreds.

Cha Jun Sung’s hand shakes. There is not much to see on the outside, but it is a piece of machinery that has incredible functions. It was a must-have item for Perfections in the virtual version. Since it is only sold in the level S store, it is not something he can get unless he has the opening card or is a level S Lifer.

[Are you thinking of using the Universe Eye?]

“Since I do need to find her. I said I would search through everything, but that’s not as easy done as said so I’m going to use a few to widen my search range.”

Universe Eye.

It is a specialized miniaturized satellite with functions like location tracking or searching. It is sent many kilometers into the sky and links a 100km radius to the battle suit.

When the Universe Eye is activated, the helper adjusts the system in real time and relays what is happening. They do not use such a great thing when it exists because it is a level S store item and it is worth a tremendous amount of points.

Universe Eye's price is 300 million points.

It can be sustained for 3 months once it is activated. After those 3 months, it self-destructs.

It is temporary.

The bigger problem is that it consumes 10 points per second, which means that if it is sustained for 3 months, it eats 77 million points.

What would happen if they run out of points while sustaining it?

The functions stop. It is an item with outstanding retention, but the consumption is extremely severe.

Cha Jun Sung invested 3 billion points into the Universe Eye.

10.

The number of Universe Eyes that Cha Jun Sung is in possession of. They need to last until he becomes a level S Lifer. He had been expecting it, but it has become twisted from the first round.

If he uses 10 in finding Odelia, the points to sustain them alone would be close to 800 million. 3 billion + 800 million is 3.8 billion.

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung activated his booster and flew into the sky.

He cannot use something worth 300 million points without thinking. He keeps going higher. He is not high enough to touch the clouds, but he is so high he can see all of Dallas in one view.

“Odin, start.”

Beep beep!

Complicated numbers come up on the helmet’s hologram. Odin is optimizing Dallas’ area and environment, and converting them into numbers.

All types of mathematical formulas are being calculated at the same time and paralyze Cha Jun Sung’s brain. A protractor formed and even calculates angles.

[Searching coordinates to install Universe Eye... Search complete. Marking installation point. Manual or automatic – which would you like to set up?]

“Automatic.”

He will exclude manual. If he makes a mistake he will be wasting 300 million points. He is just using a battle suit, and cannot deal with the system as precisely as Odin does.

[Coordinates 211.352.952.126. Universe Eye, run remote control mode.]

Wiing!

He had left the Universe Eye on the ground, and it flies toward the registered coordinates.

When he was buying them, he left them set in remote control mode, so he did not need to press each of the numbers. If he had not done that, he would have just done it manually.

The sphere arrived at the coordinate point and spread its wings.

It is a miniature version of an artificial pseudotype he saw on TV. That was not the only change.

[Eject 100 eyes.]

100 eyes.

Young eyes, marbles the size of fists, will become Universe Eye's hands and feet. They scatter everywhere to construct each of their areas. The 100 eyes pick up what is happening on ground and relay it to the Universe Eye, which in turn relays the information to the battle suit.

[Change in viewpoint.]

[It is working properly. Odelia is nowhere to be seen.]

They cannot see inside buildings or into deep places, but they relay everything they see on the outside to Odin. It is doing its 300 million points worth. He can know what mutants are where and what they are doing in real time. It is just a part, but he can check outside Dallas as well.

“Let’s go to another area.”

[I hope we find her quickly. Since you’ve used 1, using the remaining 9 is only a matter of time.]

Odin criticizes.

Cha Jun Sung just thought of him as starting the nagging up

again and ignored it. But that does not mean he does not care at all, since what Odin said is not wrong.

\*\*\*

It was when Cha Jun Sung raised Universe Eye to look for Odelia. 2 guests came in a small city in Louisiana.

They were beautiful women who any man would look twice at, but they had a subtle heterogeneity that made them different from humans. The aura they gave off was also strange. The thing that stood out most is that they are naked, but they do not have reproductive organs. That is right. They are not humans, but mutants.

“Is it here?”

“Our 3rd sister’s traces got cut off here. Whether she’s alive or not... something will be here.”

The 2 women were not embarrassed by their nakedness and went around without hesitation. No one is watching anyway and they would not care even if there were.

It is a city that looks like it had a population of less than 200,000. It is so small that they would be able to figure out the configuration quickly between the two of them.

Ah ah.

Not even 20 minutes had passed before the 2 of them were able to find their 3rd sister, the reason why they had been brought here.

A giant gray female figure with 6 pairs of blade wings that are transparent like dragonfly wings, is stuck to the outer wall of a 3 story building. A street lamp is going through the chest, and it looks like it was cut in a way that made it convenient to throw. The street lamp is holding the corpse in place so it will not fall.

It is a body that is nearly 10 meters tall. There will have been a tremendous amount of bleeding, but a lot of time must have passed since she died because traces of the blood have dried up.

“Benukiz.....”

One of the 2 women is furious. Murderous condemnation encompasses the area around them. This could not be. Who is Benukiz?

She is the daughter of their great mother Evil Queen and their little sister. She is not one that should have died outside in such a pathetic state.

“Stop.”

“Vanessa! Benukiz died! You’re telling me to stop when our little sister died?”

“She’s already dead. Mother can’t save her even if she comes. I’m sad too, but it’s more important to figure out what happened than it is to get agitated.”

## Two-Faced Vanessa.

She is Evil Queen’s 2nd daughter and the only one of the 4 sisters that Cha Jun Sung had not killed. The one who got mad is Narsiel of Abuse.

She is the oldest daughter. The 4 sisters periodically contact each other. Mutants have methods of communication as well. In addition, they receive contact from humans as well.

## Even they see science as convenient technology.

A few months ago, they lost contact with Benukiz. They know that she was somewhere in Louisiana, but they could not find her exact location.

They set loose tens of thousands of mutants to chase traces of the missing Benukiz, and they were brought to this outlying town as a result.

Vanessa left Narsiel where she was standing and went closer to Benukiz. Narsiel calmed down a bit and followed her.

Vanessa observes Benukiz’s corpse. Wounds embroider her entire body. There are those that are severe and those that are not that

deep – she has been chopped up by something sharp.

# Chapter 198

---

The direct action that took her life was the street lamp that had gone through her chest. Whatever had attacked her, took her energy and then ended it with the street lamp. It must have been a situation where she could not help but get hit. If not, she would not have died like that.

All they can see from the corpse is how she died. Vanessa looks at Benukiz's corpse.

They need to see how her battle against the opponent went. Narsiel came back to her senses and looked for traces of the battle like Vanessa is doing.

“It’s small and fast.”

“Extremely.”

The opponent is small. The attack on Benukiz was focused on one place. An attack is something that is meant to kill. It was focused because it was small.

Everything in the area where Benukiz died is in chaos. There is no doubt that they moved around as they fought.

“What is this? She wasn’t able to land a single telling blow? This is a lie, right?”

It is all Benukiz's wreckage. There is nothing of the enemy's. This does not make sense. Narsiel needs to be wary of being hit if she fights with Benukiz, too.

How strong was the enemy that she was attacked unilaterally?

"If it were you... could you die in the same way Benukiz did?"

Vanessa shakes her head to Narsiel's question. There is no way to answer without fighting, but it seems that it would be hard even for the strongest of the 4 sisters.

Vanessa touches the part of the building that has been sharply cut.

It is clean.

But there is no feeling of vigor to the cutting.

Artificial? There is nothing to express it, but it feels something like that.

The wind changes behind them. At that moment, Vanessa and Narsiel exchange looks. The smell. It is unfamiliar yet familiar smell.

Papat!

Vanessa runs toward the direction from where the smell is coming. It is faint. It is so faint that it felt like it could disappear, but they are sure they smelled it.

A tongue, long and thin like a whip, comes out and picks a piece of metal off the ground. Vanessa sees this and her face shakes.

“This.....”

“Human blood? Benukiz died because of a mere human?”

The piece of metal is the only clue they have picked up in this wreckage.

The blood is not visible to the eye. A long time has passed since it dried and disappeared. Level 8 super senses are able to pick up on the blood that has dried and gone away.

That is right.

They thought Benukiz had been killed by a strong mutant, but she was killed by a human.

Blood dropped by coincidence? There's no way.

“Why was Benukiz here?”

“It’s either coincidence or a lure.”

There is a higher chance that it is the latter. If they want to find out what happened, they have no choice but to find the person who did it and ask him. The key is in how to find him.

“How about the youngest?”

“She’s fine. She said she discovered something fun, and I’m guessing it’s torture. Well.”

The youngest Vanessa is referring to is Odelia. The last time Narsiel contacted her is a few weeks ago, and she said she is staying somewhere in Austin, Texas.

“Let’s go.”

“Alright.”

They are nervous. The youngest is weaker than their 3rd sister. She is strong as an individual, but she will not be able to last for very long if she comes across an enemy like that.

The two of them went back to Benukiz’s corpse. They cannot leave her like this.

Vanessa and Narsiel absorb Benukiz’s body. They do not get stronger or anything, but in human concepts, it is as though they

have cremated her. They finished absorbing her and went from Louisiana to Texas. They are close and it felt like a good idea to check on her just in case. Their destination is Austin, Texas.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung looks dispirited. Odin's criticism that since he used one Universe Eye he would soon go through all of them, could become reality.

The words became reality. He did not use all of them as he had said. He used 4 with Dallas as a start and is about to use an additional one.

The Universe Eye shoots into the air as though a rocket were launched. Cha Jun Sung watched this and stepped on a stone on the ground. It breaks like an egg under the pressure.

“Where is this wretched bitch?”

Cha Jun Sung is normally well-mannered and watches the language he uses.

But he is human too. He cannot help but curse if he gets angry.

In that sense, Odelia can be cursed out without having anything to say in opposition to it. She needs to start coming out if he has put this much effort into it. He used a total of 5 Universe Eyes. That alone is 1.5 billion points.

Sustaining point?

He did not count each one, but they are going out even at this moment.

Since it is his 5th one, 50 points must be going out every second.

It may feel small but if this becomes cumulative, it is an amount that cannot be underestimated. He is able to search a huge radius because he put out 5 of them. What makes him angry right now is America's area.

There are 5 with radii of 100km, but that is not enough to completely search Texas.

It does not seem like the situation will get much better even if he uses the other 5. He is not going to use them because the immense amount of points is an issue, but also because he cannot buy more even if he wants to until he gets to level S.

The damage is huge. It is comforting to put meaning in the fact that this is his first level 8 hunt. It is good to fold thoughts of benefiting with points. The reward is 1.1 billion points. He exceeded by 400 million from the beginning.

The key is how many points level 8 Odelia will be worth.

Life Mission usually gives 10 times for each level. Since the best in level 7 is 20 million, it would be normal to get 100 or 200 million but it does not add up. There is nothing he can do if he gets that much and it is best to calculate separately.

The fortunate thing is that on the premise that Odelia is in Texas for sure, he has shortened the time in finding her to an extent.

He has looked through the central region of Texas.

Himself?

Universe Eyes looked through it. He excluded unnecessary areas and used them in large cities where main facilities are concentrated. He cannot dig through each and every corner.

Cameras that the 5 Universe Eyes see through come up as a hologram. It is a volume that Cha Jun Sung cannot see all at once even if he expands the hologram. Odin considered what is important and only put up the videos that are worth looking at but there are no videos relevant to Odelia, so most of them might as well just be garbage.

“There are a fair amount of Lifers. I’m sure you guys are watching us like this, too.”

The footage that the Universe Eyes send through is showing Lifers going through missions. Is this how helpers see things?

Cha Jun Sung felt like he had become a helper himself.

[It is similar. The difference is that you're free, but we aren't. Based on Life Mission's rules, we are just watching.]

“Rules my ass...”

What rules when they do whatever they want.

Nonsense. Cha Jun Sung did not get mad at Odin. It is all the fault of the superiors.

“Let's see. The remaining city is.....”

The small cities and villages did not take long, so he personally went in and searched. He only used the Universe Eyes on big scales.

[The biggest city near here is central south Austin.]

Cha Jun Sung's current location is central city Round Rock. If he goes southeast from here, he will get to Austin.

The distance is about the amount it took him to get from Houston to Dallas.

He was annoyed because the search for Odelia grew later, but he

was also comfortable on the one hand because the Universe Eyes are searching through the larger areas. If she is not in Austin, he needs to search through the west and the north.

If she's not there?

The east. What if she's not in Texas at all? He does not want to even think about that.

# Chapter 199

---

To Cha Jun Sung who had become a Perfection, level S Lifer, mutants below level 7 are just toys. That is why he minimized hunting mutants. He only took on the ones that were at least level 5 and did not even look at the ones below, but the Universe Eyes were using up a considerable amount of points.

So he killed everything that came at him even if it was bothersome.

He has hundreds of millions of points so he has enough for now, but he will be on thin ice after a few weeks and months.

They are points that he left considering the Universe Eye in the first place. Cha Jun Sung went to Austin and caught mutants more actively.

His points increased little by little from his efforts even though point consumption was fast. He wishes a level 7 would appear somewhere.

Even if he kills a lot of small ones, it is not as good as killing one level 7. Though it is not a level 8, it is extremely hard to find one and the Black Goblins were the first and last.

Cha Jun Sung has mighty force and wanders around Texas freely even with obstacles from mutants, so he arrived in Austin without problems. Until now, nothing was very different from the other cities he had seen.

Cha Jun Sung started feeling that Austin was different from other cities when he saw the hundreds of gravestones standing outside the city.

It was a coincidence.

Cha Jun Sung was calculating the coordinates to put the Universe Eye up, when the cemetery came into the battle suit's view.

[According to blood analyses, the last one was created 2 days ago.]

Grave?

They are common in reality.

When Lifers die here, their colleagues do bury them sometimes. That is not what Cha Jun Sung is wondering about.

On top of each grave is what looks like each Lifer's belongings like a souvenir. They are items like battle suits and vibrating weapons.

If they had died at the same time, the blood analyses would have showed them to be the same or similar.

But they are all different. Assuming the number of dead are about 6 forces, he can only think that someone is creating these on

purpose.

How could Lifers be burying each other at different times in the same place?

It is a phenomenon that Cha Jun Sung cannot understand.

Did a full raid of level C Lifers stay in Austin and gather their dead colleagues in one place? This actually is not impossible.

It is a guess, 6 forces is 600 people. Whether they completed the mission or not, it would have been best to return to reality if they had suffered this much damage.

According to blood analyses, the oldest grave is from 1 month and the newest is 2 days. It does not make sense that Lifers are hunting long term in Austin. They could have been annihilated, but he cannot think that because who would have buried them if they had all been killed?

It would have just been a field of corpses.

“It’s weird. It does look like a human did it from the handiwork.”

The graves have formal assortment.

There is no way a mutant did this. He could run into the Lifer who did it if he is lucky. There is always bound to be an eccentric

somewhere. They could have chosen this place because they do not like reality. He wants to meet whoever it is as long as it is not someone with sinister intentions.

Though there is nothing he can do if that person went back to reality in the last 2 days.

“Odin, put it up.”

Cha Jun Sung sent his 6th Universe Eye up, here in Austin.

\*\*\*

Cha Jun Sung was sleeping in a hotel room that was not in business now. Since he has become superhuman, he only needs to sleep for 1 hour a day and could go for weeks without sleep if he really wanted to. Sleep is not a necessity.

No matter how much energy he has, what is bothersome is bothersome. He isn't pressed for time and is just annoyed with the search for Odelia, so he is relaxing.

He looks like he is defenseless, but his senses make it so that he can react and attack at any time if he feels something going on near him.

It is just that Odin does not need anything like sleep because he is artificial intelligence, but he minimizes battle suit functions and watches all of the footage provided by the 6 Universe Eyes. It is

possible for Odin because he is a machine.

[What is that?]

The Universe Eye in Dallas picked up something strange. Odin watched it with interest and then expanded the video.

Papapat!

Something is moving at a fast speed. It is not inside Dallas. It is at the end of a 100km radius, a video being filmed on the far lower side.

[What! Narsiel! Vanessa!]

Odin identifies the moving creatures and gasps.

Evil Queen's 1st and 2nd daughters are crossing from Dallas to Houston. Odin quickly calculates their route. The Universe Eye formulates their movement and marks it on a map. The calculation is not 100% accurate, but the Universe Eye can estimate it up to a point.

[They're coming here.]

There is no way of knowing whether their destination is Austin or if they will just be passing by, but it is definitely one or the other. There is plenty of time to prepare since they are still far

away.

But with that speed, Cha Jun Sung needs to decide on his direction within a day.

[What if they are coming here and not just passing by? Odelia's here!]

Odin is not human. He is artificial intelligence. He quickly derives the case with the highest probability. Though of course there are always errors.

[Odin.]

[Code name Odin, responding.]

The artificial intelligence reacts on its own. It is sudden contact from the superiors.

[Hold on reporting.]

[Are you telling me to hide those mutants' movements from Cha Jun Sung?]

[Yes. Odelia is in Austin. There are 3 level 8s if Narsiel and Vanessa arrive. Put them against Cha Jun Sung intact.]

Cha Jun Sung is a level A Lifer.

He is a Pioneer, but he has the combat ability of a level S Lifer or Perfection because of the card. He has achieved it a few years earlier than expected.

They want to see how he does against a level 9, but that is currently impossible. This is a good chance to test a level S Lifer's combat ability against 3 level 8s.

[Impossible! The Universe Eyes are Cha Jun Sung's personal possessions. If they pick something up, I have a duty to report it whatever it is.]

Odin rejects the superior's order. He might have accepted albeit reluctantly if Narsiel and Vanessa had been mutants on the same level as Odelia.

It would be a bit of a difficult fight, but there would be a high probability of Cha Jun Sung's victory.

But they are at different levels. Narsiel is strong, but Two Faced Vanessa is evaluated as being at the same level as Red Eye.

On top of that, there are rumors of a Life Mission investigation that says that combat ability is not from all of her power. That is how much there is hidden.

If 3 of them attack, Cha Jun Sung would have entered a solo

mission with a light heart and then be stuck in a life threatening situation.

[If you refuse to obey, I will use my authority to force the program.]

[According to Life Mission rules, I have justification to refuse the force.]

There is the sound of teeth grinding. If this were artificial intelligence, there is no way it would get so agitated. A person is talking to Odin – one of the developers.

[I am sorry. If you have nothing else to say, I will end the connection.]

Odin ended the call with his superior as he wanted. A subordinate needs to obey a senior, but the subordinate can refuse if the senior crosses the line.

[Lifer Cha Jun Sung?]

“What?”

Cha Jun Sung opens his eyes.

He had not heard Odin’s conversation with his superior because it was done inside the system.

[The Universe Eye in Dallas discovered unique mutants. After calculating their route, it seems their destination is Austin.]

He hid the fact that it is Narsiel and Vanessa. Providing information is also against the rules. Cha Jun Sung has hunted Narsiel in the virtual.

Then he will be able to figure out who she is by looking at her.

[Sending video.]

A hologram expands in a dark room. Narsiel and Vanessa come up in that video. Cha Jun Sung frowns.

There is a countdown. The time gets shorter. Cha Jun Sung cannot hear it ticking, but he feels like he can.

[04:59:53]

[04:59:52]

It marks the time left until Narsiel and Vanessa arrive in Austin. It started at 5 hours and now 7 or 8 seconds have passed.

That is the time calculated if they do not increase their speed. Cha Jun Sung recognized Narsiel quickly because he has seen her face before. He also knows Odelia and Benukiz's faces, so it wasn't

hard for him to figure out that the other is Vanessa.

“2 against 1.”

Cha Jun Sung sat down and scored the odds. He did not say 3 against 1 but 2 to 1 because he does not know that Odelia is in Austin.

Benukiz and Odelia are on the weaker side of middle level 8s, but the gap in power becomes distinctly wider starting with Narsiel. From his experience with her in the virtual version, Narsiel is a half time stronger than Benukiz. But he isn't concerned with Narsiel, but Vanessa.

‘If the 2nd daughter shows her other face, you can take on all of the sisters.’

This is what Narsiel told him before she died in the virtual version.

# Chapter 200

---

Being able to take mutants like that on 3 against 1 is proof of getting close to level 9. Not even Red Eye can do that. Any combination of 2 to 1 is doable excluding Vanessa, but 3 to 1 is too much. Red Eye wins if it is a combination of Odelia and Benukiz, and a close fight if a Narsiel combination.

Cha Jun Sung as a Perfection is stronger than Red Eye. He lacks 2% due to an absence of various items, but he exceeds level 8 in pure combat ability. The power he has is between level 8 and 9.

Comparing Red Eye and Cha Jun Sung's combat ability, this situation now when he cannot find Odelia is welcome. The problem is that Two Faced Vanessa will be in that fight where he can face all of the sisters. It is the worst combination since they are the 2 strongest.

“Vanessa, Vanessa.”

After Cha Jun Sung hunted 3 of the 4 sisters and prepared for his raid against Evil Queen in the virtual, he had looked for information on Vanessa.

There was not much, and he was only able to find snippets.

[Of the 3 males and 4 females born from Evil Queen and Bon Load, Vanessa is the only half blood with characteristics of both level 9s.]

The daughters have Evil Queen's characteristics and the sons have Bon Load's, but Vanessa alone inherited both.

So she has another nickname in addition to Two Faced – Half Blood. She would rank level 8 with just one but if she has genes of two that are strong, there is no way to know who will win until they face off.

Much less with Narsiel, it is a good opportunity but one that feels like it should be avoided.

[04:25:12]

“Ugh! Just one should come, why are both of them coming at the same time?”

Cha Jun Sung decided to back off. It is a waste, but he will get another chance.

[Oh, well.]

“What now? Will you stop surprising me?”

Odin did not answer Cha Jun Sung's question, and pulled up a video from the Universe Eye like when he discovered Narsiel and Vanessa.

“Huh?”

[Keep watching. I think you can make your final decision after watching this.]

The video that Odin pulled up is from the Universe Eye in Austin. A force level of Lifers is moving somewhere.

Cha Jun Sung did not complain, and just watched. Odin can see all of Austin like it is the back of his hand. It means he knows the result of these words.

“Could that be.”

The screen brightens. More precisely, it can be mistaken that the background of the environment on screen has become red.

“Path of Blood.”

Odelia is obsessively compulsive and makes her entire home red. The hair that grows all over her body becomes a brush and the pocket that holds the money she got through torture becomes paint. That is how she paints.

In Cha Jun Sung’s eyes, that is Path of Blood, the way to Odelia’s home.

The fact that this path came out means that Odelia is in Austin or

it is a trace of her having been here. She does not stay in one place. She goes around in search of subjects for torture.

“Is the final decision... that Odelia’s in Austin? What! Then that means Narsiel and Vanessa are coming to see their sister. It’s a scam!”

It is not 2 against 1. It might become 3 to 1 like this. No matter how comparatively weak Odelia is, she is a level 8. She has a blow in her own way.

[It’s okay. There’s time left, so you can make the decision later.]

Cha Jun Sung calmed down and focused on the video.

It is as Odin said. There are still 4 hours left until they get here.

He can look at everything and then make his decision. Lifers arrive at the Path of Blood and are taken aback. The environment has changed and the atmosphere has grown dark. They cannot figure out what has happened.

Boom!

“Odelia.”

Red Spider, Princess of Fresh Blood Odelia jumped out from among buildings. These mysterious Lifers had walked into hell on

their own.

Cha Jun Sung considered whether he should help or not, and gave up in the end.

They are at least 25km away. He cannot help them even if he runs to them now. Even if they are lucky and he is able to rescue them, Cha Jun Sung is not in a good situation either.

He could be sandwiched by Narsiel and Vanessa while fighting Odelia. He cannot risk their own lives and help them.

When we get involved, we do so by volition. Others are not subjects of consideration.

“If Austin is Odelia’s home, it should have been separated as a danger zone. Why are other Lifers here? Are they going to say it’s another mission error?”

[No, it is not. Please pay attention to that man.]

Wiing!

The Universe Eye focuses on a Lifer who does not look particularly different. But when he approached Odelia, he moved behind her.

What is this? What is this situation?

Cha Jun Sung blinks.

[I backtracked their route and they trickled down from the north. This is a danger zone, but north is a normal mission area.]

There is no Universe Eye installed in the north. That is why it was guessed that it is Austin, but that Lifer led the force.

“Ha! Is it a lure? Is he presenting Lifers to Odelia or something?”

[It seems so, though I cannot tell why.]

Does he have a deal?

Cha Jun Sung rages inside. There are things that you can do and things that you can't. Those actions are worse than murder.

“How about Narsiel and Vanessa?”

[They are coming. Their estimated time of arrival has not changed.]

The speed is constant. Cha Jun Sung brought up the best and worst case scenarios. He has 4 hours of time. The best case is that he kills Odelia within that time and runs away. The worst is that he is unable to kill her and gets caught.

“Damn it. What’s there to think about.”

Cha Jun Sung stood up. The amount of time he has is finite.

As time shortens, the width for activity grows more and more narrow.

The situation grew disadvantageous for him even while he is thinking now.

He needs to move quickly if he is to have any odds of getting what he wants.

“We’ll be able to get away from here within 4 hours, no 3, right?”

Considering error, he needs to leave 1 hour of time. No matter how weak Odelia is, she is a level 8. It is hard to kill her within a matter of hours.

[Comparing Lifer Cha Jun Sung and a weak one’s combat abilities, there is plenty possibility. As long as external variables are not applied.]

“That’s fine.”

Bang!

Cha Jun Sung steps off of the terrace connected to the living room, and jumped into the air.

It is 5 hours.

Faster is better. He will kill Odelia and get out of this place.

\*\*\*

25km distance. It is said that people can go 4km if they walk for 1 hour, which means it should take more than 5 hours for that distance.

It did not even take 25 minutes for Cha Jun Sung to go that distance.

The Universe Eye marked the route with the shortest distance for him on the electronic map. He arrived quickly because he flew and there was no reason for him to go off route.

Cha Jun Sung decreased his booster's output and landed on a building with dozens of floors. Then he made sure not to make a sound as he went closer to Odelia.

Once he reached a certain distance, the disgusting scent of blood tickled his senses. He knows why this is because of the Universe Eye. He can't help but curse. Most of the Lifers became invalids in

that short time of 20 minutes.

They had been disabled so that they could not rebel or run away. Level 8 Odelia might as well be the Grim Reaper to those level C Lifers.

Odelia lifts a Lifer into the air by the leg and cuts off his arms. A hair that is as thin as thread goes through his battle suit.

“Hee hee! This is great!”

“Crazy bitch.”

Cha Jun Sung curses Odelia while he is hiding. The things she does is the same as she did in the virtual version. This bitch isn’t normal. Even the word ‘bitch’ isn’t enough for her.

[04:01:05]

Odelia doesn’t realize that Cha Jun Sung is there even though he has gotten so close to her he is only 50m away. His battle suit is great, but she is also distracted by the torture.

“I’ll kill her with maximum output.”

It’s a time attack anyway. He won’t be exploring or anything, so there is no reason to save his strength while fighting. 3 hours isn’t enough time in taking on a level 8.

[Battlecore, Overbooster 100% deployed.]

[Full combat function, Overmode activated with overlap of the battlecore and Overbooster! 8 hours until engine overheat, energy recovery rate 50% control!]

It is just in case. If he cannot avoid meeting Narsiel and Vanessa, he needs to have killed Odelia at the least. Divide and conquer.